

COLUMBIA LIBRARIES OFFSITE
AVERY FINE ARTS RESTRICTED



AR01397303

THE BOROUGH OF THE BRONX



HARRY T. COOK

Ex Libris

SEYMOUR DURST

t' Fort nieuw Amsterdam op de Manhatans



FORT NEW AMSTERDAM



(NEW YORK), 1651

*When you leave, please leave this book
Because it has been said
"Ever'thing comes t' him who waits
Except a loaned book."*

AVERY ARCHITECTURAL AND FINE ARTS LIBRARY
GIFT OF SEYMOUR B. DURST OLD YORK LIBRARY

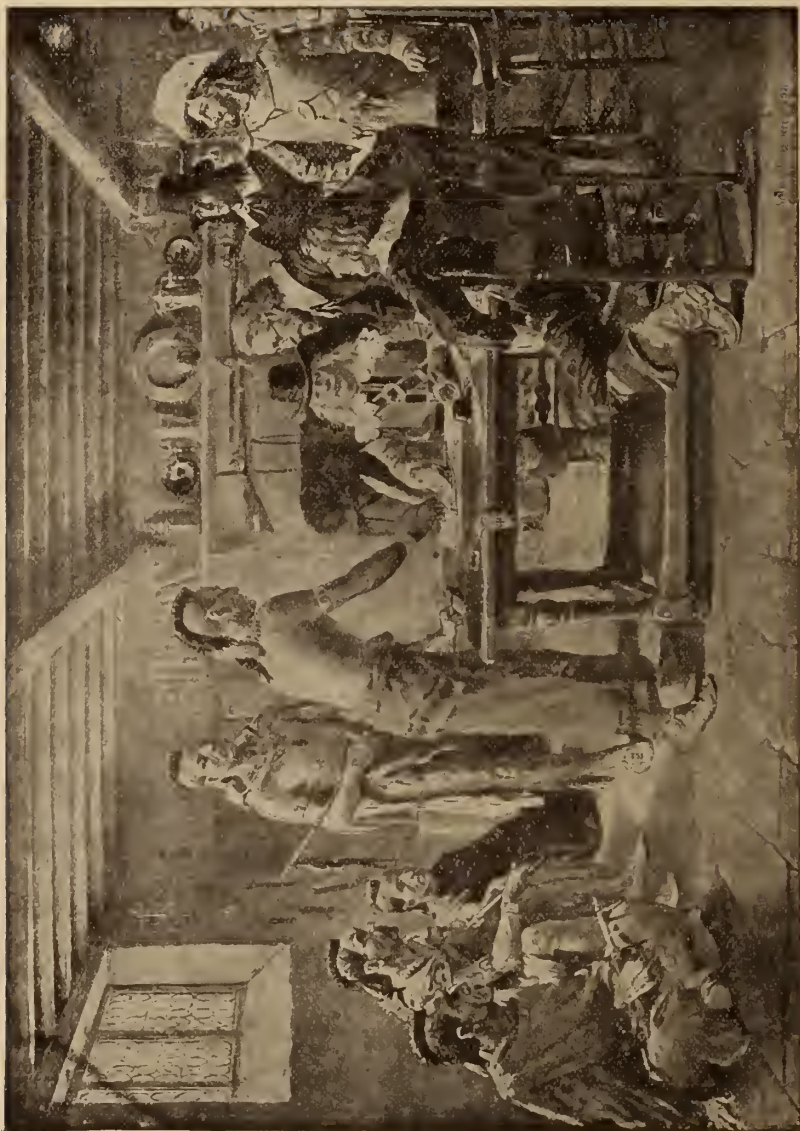
Very sincerely yours,

Harry T. Cook

Kelley V/N-



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013



Courtesy of the Title Guarantee and Trust Company.

SIGNING THE TREATY WITH THE INDIANS IN 1642 AT THE HOME OF JONAS BRONCK.

FROM THE PAINTING BY JOHN WARD DUNSMORE. COPYRIGHT 1908

THE BOROUGH OF THE BRONX 1639 - 1913

ITS MARVELOUS
DEVELOPMENT
AND HISTORICAL
SURROUNDINGS

BY
HARRY T. COOK

ASSISTED BY
NATHAN J. KAPLAN

PUBLISHED BY THE AUTHOR
AT 1660 BOONE AVENUE, NEW YORK
1913

OFFICE

F

128.68

EB

C 27

1913g

COPYRIGHT, 1913
BY
HARRY T. COOK
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

FOREWORD

THE PURPOSE of this book is to tell the story of the wonderful rise and development of the Borough of The Bronx. It is a story of heroic endeavor, individual self-denial, slow progress and final triumph. The hardy pioneers who sacrificed their comforts and lives to wrest the wilderness from its savage lords, and who blazed the path for progress and civilization, builded better than they knew.

The teeming Borough today is a noble monument to the greatness of the men who brought it into being. As long as it endures their achievements will be told in song and story.

Here will be found a record of the extraordinary growth of this great Borough. It is not the purpose of this work, however, to give a detailed description of the early history of The Bronx, but rather a brief summary of the most memorable events in its historical, commercial and municipal development.

It has been the aim of this book to indicate the modern development and future prospects of the Borough as well as to create associations of Colonial and Revolutionary memories with which almost every inch of ground in the Borough is hallowed.

In compiling a work of this kind, the author has had much assistance in gathering material and making it accurate and authentic. He is especially indebted to Mr. Nathan J. Kaplan for assistance rendered, suggestions made and material furnished; also to Mr. James L. Wells, Mr. Louis F. Haffen, Mr. Walter G. Scott, Mr. Lindsay M'Kenna, and Mr. Randall Comfort, who furnished many of the photographs illustrating this book—all of whom have rendered valuable service and made possible the publishing of this book.

Where facts could not be obtained from local residents, the author consulted early histories and documents for his data.

Chief among the books consulted were Bolton's "*History of Westchester County*"; Scharf's "*History of Westchester County*"; Comfort's "*History of the Borough of the Bronx*"; Kelly's "*Historic Guide to New York*"; and Jenkins' "*The Story of The Bronx*." The last mentioned work has been recently issued and contains a mine of historic information relative to the Borough. Besides these, a host of minor books, encyclopedias, newspapers and magazines were drawn upon.

HARRY T. COOK.



Like tall monument of granite
Standeth Tackamuck, the mourner,
Grieving for his vanished nation
Long years thriving in their vigor
'Mong the Bronx hills, but now scattered
As dead leaves by blasts of autumn.

In his vision sad the chieftain
Sees of white man's arts the progress
Through the long moons—arts transplanted
From the distant lands of sunrise
To grow fair in western tillage
And displace the Indian customs.

Out of stone brought from the quarries
The new builder rears his dwellings
Towering like the pines of forest,
Steadfast in the gales of winter,
Better than the deerskin wigwam
Gone from sight upon the morrow.

Through the waters once so tranquil—
On their placid wave reflecting
All the blueness of the heaven—
Now the boats of the bold stranger,
Every birch canoe surpassing,
Swiftly dash, like the strong salmon.

O'er the plains the steam horse rushes,
Faster than the flying pony
Ridden once by fearless warrior;
In the air above the tree tops
Soar the wingèd ships like eagles,
Mounting to the highest heaven.

All, O Tackamuck, has altered
Since in Bronx woods roamed thy people;
Yet their setting suns are followed
By a better morning's sunrise
For the Indian who surviveth
And for him who is thy brother.

'Tis the will of the Great Spirit
Ruling high above the storm clouds,
Maker of this earth so beauteous,
With its satisfying fountains
Flowing full for all his children,
Both the Red Man and the Pale Face.

—A. B. SANFORD.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. EARLY HISTORY	1
Henry Hudson Skirts the Western Shore of The Bronx, 1609 —His Encounter with the Indians—Adrien Block Explores the Eastern Shore, 1614—The Settlement and Development of The Bronx—An Intimate Recital of Jonas Bronck, the First White Settler to Locate There.	
II. MORRISANIA	12
Colonial and Revolutionary Days—Story of the Public-Spirited and Patriotic Morris Family—Lewis Morris, Signer of the Decla- ration of Independence, Who Backed up His Signature by Joining the Army with His Three Sons—Gouverneur Morris, Statesman and Diplomat—Landmarks in Morrisania—Founda- tion of Village in 1848.	
III. DEVELOPMENT OF THE BRONX	23
What Organized and Intelligent Effort has Accomplished—The Rush of Capital and Steady Flow of Population.	
IV. A CITY WITHIN A CITY	30
How the Child Grew up a Giant—The Past Speaks in Thunder Tones of the Prosperity Advancing Years Bring to the Home, the Merchant and the Manufacturer—What Rapid Transit Stands for in the Growth of a Metropolis.	
V. BIG INDUSTRIES	36
Where Men and Women Shop—The Facilities Offered by Trac- tion Companies—Proposed Improvements.	
VI. THE STORY OF GREAT BRIDGES	45
The Water Front That Invites Big Ships from Over the Seven Seas—Early Highways.	
VII. THE PARKS	56
The Parks Show Nature in Her Happiest Mood—Broad Acres Yield to Sport and Sentiment—Scenes Hallowed by Sacrifices and Struggles of Our Ancestors—A Page of Old History—The Bronx Beautiful Society.	
VIII. EDUCATIONAL INSTITUTIONS	72
How the Future of the Child is Anticipated and the Schools Turn Out the Men and Women of Tomorrow—Churches—How the Spiritual and Moral Welfare is Looked After—Hospitals— Benevolent and Charitable Institutions—Cemeteries.	
IX. OAK POINT	83
The "Cradle of Cuban Liberty"—Wreck of the British Frigate <i>Hussar</i> .	
X. HUNT'S POINT	89
Colonial and Revolutionary Days—The Story of Joseph Rod- man Drake—A Visit to "God's Little Acre."	
XI. THE ROMANCE OF BESSIE WARREN	102
The Daughter of Old Simon the Landlord of the "King's Arms" —Her Love for the Dashing Officer Who Was Branded a British Spy—The Maiden Who Did Not Forget But Answered the Sum-	

CONTENTS

	mons of a Beckoning Spirit and Was Taken Over the Great Beyond.	
XII.	The "NEUTRAL GROUND" The Indian Cave—Leggett and His Stolen Mare—The Westchester Guides—Barretto's Point—Wooden Armchairs that Came over with the Pilgrim Fathers.	106
XIII.	NATHAN HALE "I regret That I Have But One Life to Lose for My Country"—Capt. Hale, the Patriot, Scholar and Soldier, Whose Mission Brought Him Death But Spread His Name on the Living Pages of History.	112
XIV.	CLASON'S POINT The Coney Island of The Bronx—Cornell's Neck—Three Clergymen Who Hid in a Farm House in the Days of the Revolution—The Distinction of the Ferris Mansion at Zerega's Point—The Fate of Anne Hutchinson.	119
XV.	THROGG'S NECK "The Lexington of Westchester"—How American Patriots Repulsed the Enemy at Throgg's Neck—Colonel John Glover, the Hero of Pell's Point, Who Saved Washington from Disastrous Defeat—"Spy Oak," from Whose branches a Red-Coat was Hanged.	126
XVI.	CITY ISLAND AND EASTCHESTER The Blacksmith Who Refused to Shoe a Horse on Sunday—Scenes That Figure in the Fight for Independence—President John Adams in The Bronx.	133
XVII.	WEST FARMS The Homes of Notable Men: <i>Foxhurst, Brightside, Sunnyside</i> —The Quaint Presbyterian Church at the Graves Where Heroes Lie Buried—The Draft Riots During the Civil War—"Wishing Rock," Where the Algonquin Braves Wooed the Fair Stockbridge Maids.	141
XVIII.	FORDHAM MANOR Edgar Allan Poe and His Cottage at Fordham, Where He Won a Niche in the Hall of Fame That He had Not Dreamed of—Friederick Philipse Whose Ships Brought Fortunes to These Shores.	150
XIX.	HISTORIC KINGSBRIDGE Fort Independence and Other Old Fortifications—Story of General Richard Montgomery the Hero of Quebec.	158
XX.	THE VAN CORTLANDTS The Old Public-Spirited Colonial Family Who Figured Prominently in American History—Cortlandt Manor Founded, 1697—Pierre and Philip Van Cortlandt Who Scorned England's Promises and Favors and Espoused the American Cause.	167
XXI.	PELHAM AND WESTCHESTER Thomas Pell the Founder of Pelham Manor—The Glittering Pageant of Lord Howe's Troops to Impress the Westchesterites With the Strength of the British Army—History of St. Peter's Church, Westchester.	173
XXII.	THE OLD TIMERS' ASSOCIATION Men Who Have Been Residents of The Bronx for Fifty Years or More—An Interesting Chapter By its Historian, Sidwell S. Randall.	183
	INDEX	189

ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
Signing the Treaty with the Indians in 1642 at the Home of Jonas Bronck	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Pudding Rock	3
Henry Hudson Monument	4
Lydig House, Bronx Park	7
Lewis Morris	12
Gouverneur Morris Mansion	16
Wm. H. Morris Mansion	17
Outhouse, Morris Farm	18
Home Street, Looking East from Union Avenue in 1883.....	28
Old Vyse Mansion	31
Junction 149th Street and Third Avenue	37
McKinley Square	38
Boston Road, South from 166th Street in 1883	39
Forest Avenue, South from Home Street in 1883	40
King's Bridge over Spuyten Duyvil Creek in 1856	46
Farmer's Bridge (Dyckman's) over Spuyten Duyvil Creek in 1860	47
Free or Farmer's Bridge in 1910	48
Macomb's Dam Bridge over Harlem River in 1838	49
Macomb's Dam Bridge in 1861	50
Macomb's Mansion Kingsbridge	51
Willis Avenue Bridge	52
Pell Treaty Oak, Pelham Bay Park	58
Van Cortlandt Vault, Van Cortlandt Park	60
Van Cortlandt Mansion, Van Cortlandt Park	61
Van Cortlandt Mills	62
Tenth and Fifteenth Milestones	63
Hadley House	64
Indian Monument, Van Cortlandt Park	66
Elephant House, Bronx Park	67
"Gunda," the Famous Elephant of Bronx Park Zoo	68
Bird Court, Bronx Park	69
Lorillard Mansion, Bronx Park	70
Bathgate Homestead	71
New York University	74
Morris High School	76
Casanova Mansion	84
Subterranean Passage and Cells	86
Leggett's Lane	87
Hunt's Mansion	93
Relics Found in Hunt's Mansion	94

ILLUSTRATIONS

Hunt's Point Cemetery in 1900	98
Grave of Joseph Rodman Drake	99
Slave Burying Ground	101
Indian Cave	107
Mayflower Chairs	109
"Woodside" Mansion	110
The Locusts	113
Nathan Hale Monument in City Hall Park	116
Page from Memorandum Book	117
Watson Mansion	120
Ferris Mansion, Zerega's Point	121
Split Rock, Pelham Bay Park	123
Massacre of Anne Hutchinson's Colony	124
Spy Oak, Pelham Road	131
Paul Homestead	132
Old City Island Bridge	134
St. Paul's Church, Eastchester	137
Old Reid's Mill, Eastchester	139
Old Hunt Inn	142
West Farms Cemetery	144
Isaac Varian Homestead	146
Washington's Gun House	148
Edgar Allan Poe	150
Fordham Dutch Reformed Church	154
Gen. Richard Montgomery	158
Bronze Tablet, Fort Number One	159
Rev. Isaac Wilkins	173
Lord Howe Chestnut	177
St. Peter's Church, Westchester	179
Group of "Old Timers"	184

CHAPTER I

EARLY HISTORY

Henry Hudson Skirts the Western Shore of The Bronx, 1609—His Encounter with the Indians—Adrien Block Explores the Eastern Shore, 1614—The Settlement and Development of The Bronx—An Intimate Recital of Jonas Bronck, the First White Settler to Locate There.



THE Borough of The Bronx affords a history probably more remarkable and more unique than that of any of her sister boroughs. Its numerous historic points of interest, both civil and military, make it a center of attraction to travelers from all over the United States.

The important part The Bronx has played in the making of this country's history is, however, not its only claim to our interest. Of even greater significance is its wonderful and rapid progress. There is not another tract of land in the whole United States that can boast of so marvelous a growth in population and in development within the past ten years. Indeed, so prodigious has been its increase and so progressive its development, that it has no parallel in the annals of municipal government.

Prior to the white man's invasion, this region was inhabited by various tribes of Indians, the most noted of which were the Mohegans, Weckquaesgeeks, Siwanoy, Sint Sincs (or Sint Sincks), Kitchenwonks (or Kitchawances), Manhattans, Tankitekes and the Taekmucks. They were the same in their general habits and ways of life, but there was a marked distinction in their individual character.

No one knows where the North American Indian originally came from. There are many ingenious theories to explain his presence on this continent. The most plausible and the one most generally accepted is, that his ancestors found their way from Asia across Behring Strait, many centuries ago, and, migrating southward, gradually overspread North and South America. The latest scientific researches corroborate this theory.

Not content with this, scientists go still further back to what they term the Glacial Era, when a mass of ice covered this land and the only inhabitant of which was the "glacial man," a wild savage whose features and characteristics resembled those of the Esquimau.

Geologists who have made a careful study of the Glacial Period, or Ice Age, say that in ages past nearly all of North America north of the fortieth parallel was covered with moving ice sheets, or glaciers. We find evidences of this everywhere even in our own Borough, where rock surfaces have been ground and polished, and great boulders, which have been carried along hundreds of miles by the slowly moving glaciers, have found lodgment here and there. The "Rocking Stone," just west of the Buffalo range in Bronx Park, which is an example, has been for years one of the curiosities of that region. Tradition has it that sachems and medicine-men of the various Indian tribes built their council-fires about this colossal cube of pinkish granite and held there many a weird seance.

A wager was once made between a neighboring farmer and the foreman of the Lydig estate, upon which the stone stood, that the combined efforts of twenty-four oxen could not dislodge it from its bed, notwithstanding the fact that a single person pushing from the right direction, can easily sway it back and forth. The presence of the rock on the same site attests the futility of the effort.

Another gigantic boulder was "Pudding Rock," at Boston Road and Cauldwell Avenue, just below East One Hundred Sixty-sixth Street. This ancient landmark gained its name from its resemblance to a pudding in the bag. On one side of the boulder nature had chisled out a fireplace which the Indians used when they held their corn feasts. It was also under the cool shade of this mammoth rock that the tired Huguenots paused to rest when they made their weekly pilgrimage from New Rochelle to worship at the shrine of Old Trinity Church. This once cherished landmark is no more. In order to make room for a modern residence, it has been shattered into a thousand fragments by the advancing march of civilization.

Other noted boulders that have been generally accepted as relics of the Pleistocene period are "Black Rock," on Westchester Avenue, just above the old Watson estate and the Westchester

Golf Club, and "Split Rock," on Prospect Hill Road, in Pelham Bay Park. This great boulder is one of the interesting sights of the neighborhood, and stands a few feet south of Split Rock Road, not far from the city line. On a section of the same historic roadway from which "Split Rock" may be seen, are "Glover's Rock" and "Jack's Rock," the former emblazoned with



PUDDING ROCK

a bronze tablet in commemoration of the brave patriots under Colonel Glover, who, while checking the advance of Howe's army, enabled Washington to reach White Plains in safety. Many others of less fame are scattered thruout the Borough.

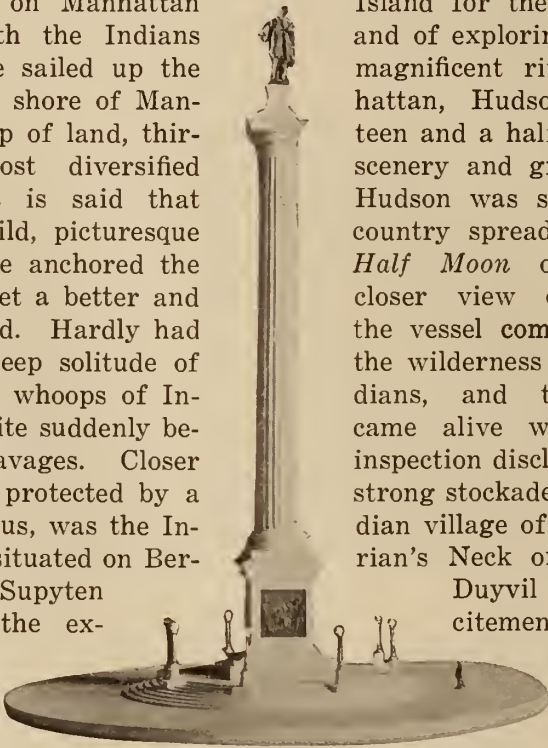
From an historical point of view, The Bronx had its beginning September 13, 1609, when Henry Hudson, the intrepid English navigator, flying the Orange, White and Blue of the United Provinces, sailed up the river which now bears his name;

altho its actual history, dates with the arrival, thirty years later, of Jonas Bronck, its first white settler.

To Hudson, who was employed by the Dutch East India Company, had been assigned the task of discovering a northwest passage to the Pacific—that long-sought sea-way to the Indies, for which all the nations and the traders of Europe were then striving. He failed in this undertaking, but he brought back news that was of far greater value to the Dutch nation than the route for which he had been in search.

The Dutch were at that time the foremost commercial people in the world, and it was not long after Hudson had made known his discovery that venturesome Hollanders began to make their appearance on Manhattan trading with the Indians. As he sailed up the western shore of Man- narrow strip of land, thir- of the most diversified beauty. It is said that with the wild, picturesque eyes that he anchored the Duyvil to get a better and charnted land. Hardly had when the deep solitude of by the loud whoops of In- ridge opposite suddenly be- horde of savages. Closer fied village protected by a torians tell us, was the In- which was situated on Ber- shore of Supyten

From the ex-
Moon cre-
evident
dians were
know what
this strange ap-
anchor off their



HENRY HUDSON MONUMENT

Island for the purpose of and of exploring the coun- magnificent river skirting hattan, Hudson found a teen and a half miles long, scenery and great natural Hudson was so impressed country spread before his *Half Moon* off Spuyten closer view of the en- the vessel come to a stop the wilderness was broken dians, and the wooded came alive with a wild inspection disclosed a forti- strong stockade. This, his- dian village of *Nipinchsen*, rian's Neck on the north Duyvil Creek.

citement the *Half* ated, it was that the In- at a loss to to make of

some evil spirit the medicine-men of some hostile tribe sent to awe them, or was she a stranger from some distant country? But

whether she was friend or foe, their curiosity would not down, and presently they put out from the shore in several canoes and boldly headed for the *Half Moon*. Their dread of the supernatural powers the strange craft might possess apparently had forsaken them and they came aboard and inspected her with the greatest interest. As they started to return to their canoes, an attempt was made to detain two of their number. The Indians vigorously resented this breach of hospitality. Before the *Half Moon* got under way they leaped overboard and made their escape, and when they reached shore they shrieked disdain and scorn at Hudson.

It may have been a coincidence, but it is an established fact that the next stop Hudson made after leaving Spuyten Duyvil was Yonkers, then the Indian village of *Nappeckamok*, and the present northern boundary line of The Bronx. It will thus be seen that he practically outlined the Borough. Be that as it may, The Bronx citizens, at the suggestion of Wm. C. Muschenheim, have commemorated that event by erecting a beautiful monument on the brow of the hill which overlooks the scene of his first anchorage.

The monument, designed by Walter Cook, is in the shape of a Roman Doric column, 100 feet in height, and it stands on an elevation of 200 feet from the river. The shaft is to be surmounted by a sixteen-foot statue of Henry Hudson, sculptured by Karl Bitter. There is to be a balcony at the top of the column, to be reached by means of a spiral stairway within the shaft, from which a magnificent panoramic view of The Bronx can be had.

Another tribute paid to the memory of this great admiral is the Hudson Memorial Bridge now in process of construction. This magnificent structure is to span Spuyten Duyvil Creek at its confluence with the Hudson River and is to connect the Boulevard Lafayette with the beautiful Spuyten Duyvil Parkway. The bridge was to have been constructed by 1909, the three hundredth anniversary of Hudson's explorations, but the plans did not meet with the approval of the Municipal Art Commission.

Hudson ascended the river to Albany, holding communication with the Indians along the way, and so kind and friendly was their disposition toward him that he wrote of them as the "loving people." On September 23d, he began his return voyage, sailing thru the Highlands, and on October 1st he anchored the *Half*

Moon below the village of *Sackhoes* on the site of which Peekskill has been built. Here many of the Indians came aboard and marveled at the size of the huge ship. Among the visitors was a chief who persuaded Hudson to accompany him to his village.

"I sailed to the shore in one of their canoes," Hudson afterwards wrote in describing his reception, "with an old man who was the chief of their tribe, which consisted of forty men and seventeen women. There I saw them in a house well constructed of oak bark, cylindrical in shape, with an arched roof, and it had the appearance of being well built. It contained a great quantity of maize and beans of last year's growth, while near the house there lay, for the purpose of drying, enough to load three ships, besides what was growing in the fields. On our coming into the house, two mats were spread out for us to sit upon, and immediately some food was served in well carved red wooden bowls; two men were also at once dispatched with bows and arrows in quest of game, and they soon returned with a pair of pigeons which they had killed. They likewise killed a fat dog which they hastily skinned with shells they had got out of the water." Hudson failed to state how he relished the dog.

When Hudson, on October 2d, passed the scene of his first anchorage, he was amazed to see a large fleet of canoes, swarmed with red-skinned warriors, put out from *Shorackkappock*, now named Spuyten Duyvil Creek, and boldly advancing toward the *Half Moon* evidently intent upon avenging the attempted kidnapping of their tribesmen and the breaking of faith with them. When they came within bow shot they showered a volley of arrows. This was the signal for hostilities to begin. The leader of the *Half Moon* quickly gave the order to fire. Bullets belched forth from the vessel's side, killing a number of warriors and wounding many more. The Indians, astounded at the havoc wrought by the white man's weapons, became demoralized, and leaping into the water, swam frantically for shore. Clear of all danger, the *Half Moon* now re-entered New York Bay.

But the Indians would not be so easily subdued. With renewed courage, and reinforced by several hundred, they gathered at what is now known as Fort Washington Point and again attacked the vessel as she was floating down the stream. A few musket shots soon put them to flight with the loss of nine of their warriors.

There has been much discussion as to the origin of the name of Spuyten Duyvil. It is one of those historical mysteries for whose solution so many delightful theories have been advanced and there is no likelihood of its ever being satisfactorily explained.

We learn from various deeds and documents of the Seventeenth Century that the Indian name for Spuyten Duyvil Creek was *Paparinemo*. The earliest reference to Spuyten Duyvil under that name is found in a remonstrance by Adrien Van Der Donck, grantee of Yonkers, which was presented to the directors of the West India Company, on May 26, 1653. In this remon-



From an Old Painting

LYDIG HOUSE, BRONX PARK

strance he recites that his grant included, besides the Yonkers valley, a convenient valley nearby bordering on the hill behind the Island of Manhattan at *Paparinemo*, called by the people "Speijt den Duyvel." Riker quotes an old record, dated 1672, which refers to "Spuyten Duyvil, alias the Fresh Spring." "Spitting Devil," "Spouting Devil," "Spiking Devil," "Spikendevil," are a few of the ways in which the name occurs on ancient maps and in old documents.

Many will no doubt recall Washington Irving's legend on the origin of Spuyten Duyvil—how trumpeter Anthony Van Corlaer arrived at the creek one stormy day to summon the Dutch farmers

of the mainland to the defence of New Amsterdam, and found no ferryman daring enough to venture across. "The wind was blowing a perfect hurricane, which sent the waters swirling like a maelstrom. For a short time Anthony vaped like an impatient ghost upon the brink, and then bethinking himself of the urgency of his errand, took a hearty embrace of his stone bottle, swore most valorously that he would swim across 'in spite of the devil' (*en spijt den Duyvel*), and daringly plunged into the stream. Luckless Anthony! Scarce had he been buffeted half way across the stream, when he was observed to struggle violently as if battling with the spirit of the waters—instinctively he put his trumpet to his mouth, and giving a vehement blast, sank forever to the bottom."

Altho this is entirely a work of the imagination, and has no basis in fact, it seems as good a solution of the mystery as any other offered.

Four years after the English navigator sailed up the Hudson, one Adrien Block, while cruising up the Long Island Sound in the first ship ever built by white men on Manhattan Island, landed somewhere along the eastern shore of The Bronx,—very likely on the island which bears his name. Shortly after Hudson returned to Holland with the *Half Moon*, a company of merchants in Amsterdam sent out five vessels loaded with goods to be traded with the Indians in America for furs. Among the skippers of this fleet was Adrien Block, commanding a ship called the *Tiger*. The other ships having gone to various parts of the new continent, Block, who had visited Manhattan Island in 1610 or 1611, decided that the lower end of the island was a good place to land and trade.

Some time during the latter part of 1613 the *Tiger* caught fire, and was completely destroyed. In order to continue their trading and exploration of the surrounding country, the Captain and crew immediately started to build a new vessel. It may have been that the necessary rigging and iron work for this new vessel had been saved from the *Tiger*, for the work progressed so rapidly that she was finished and launched early in the following spring. The ship was called the *Onrust* ("Restless"), and was built on the site of what is now Fraunce's Tavern. Not only was this the first sailing vessel built on Manhattan Island, but it was the third one constructed by white men on the American continent. The first had been built a little more than one hundred years be-

fore by Spaniards in California, and the second, in 1608, by a party of Englishmen on the Kennebec River. But nothing ever developed from Block's visit to The Bronx.

The honor of being the first white settler to locate in The Bronx belongs to Jonas Bronck, who came from Hoorn, Holland, in July, 1639, with his friend Jochem Pietersen Kuyter, a Danish capitalist.

The arrival of their ship, *De Brant von Trogen* ("The Fire of Troy"), which they had chartered together at Amsterdam was hailed by the colony as a great public good, and coming well recommended from the Fatherland, they experienced little difficulty in obtaining land upon which to settle.

Kuyter settled on the Manhattan side of the Harlem River upon a tract of nearly four hundred acres of fine farming land of which he had obtained a grant from the East India Company. The farm stretched along the Harlem River and ran south to West One Hundred Twenty-seventh Street.

Bronck, however, crossed the Harlem River and settled in what is known today as "Old Morrisania." Here he erected a stone dwelling, a barn, several tobacco houses and two barracks for his servants and farm hands, whom he had brought over with his own family. Among these were Pieter Andriessen and Laurens Duyts, fellow passengers to whom Bronck had advanced one hundred and twenty-one florins to pay their board upon the ship and who had been hired by Bronck to help clear the five hundred-acre tract which he had purchased from the Indian sachems Ranachqua and Tackamuck. This tract, according to old records, lay between the Great Kill (Harlem River) and the Aquahung (Bronx River). In return for their labor Andriessen and Duyts were to have the privilege of planting tobacco and maize upon Bronck's land, but only on condition that they would break up a certain quantity of new land every two years for the planting of grain, and then the spot which they had cultivated was to be returned to Bronck. In this way the land was cultivated free of cost to the owner.

Bronck called his home *Emmaus*. It was situated near the present Harlem River station of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad at One Hundred and Thirty-second Street. An adjacent river (the Aquahung) became known as Bronck's (later shortened to Bronx) River, and in recent times the name was applied to the whole Borough.

That Bronck was well pleased with the purchase of his property is shown by a letter he penned to Pieter Van Alst, a relative in the Old World, in which he speaks about his land in the most glowing terms. "The invisible hand of the Almighty Father," he writes, "surely guided me to this beautiful country, a land covered with virgin forest and unlimited opportunities. It is a veritable paradise and needs but the industrious hand of man to make it the finest and most beautiful region in all the world." Could Bronck rise out of his grave today he would see how well his prophecy has been fulfilled.

Bronck was evidently a man of culture and refinement. His scholarly ability was displayed in the treaty of peace which he drafted and which was signed in his house on March 28, 1642, by the Dutch and by the Weckquaesgeek chiefs. This compact was faithfully adhered to until his death in 1643. Bronck left a widow and one son, Pieter Jonassen Bronck. The widow, Antonia Slagboom, married Arendt Van Corlear, Sheriff of Rensselaerswyck, who sold Bronck's estate to Jacob Jans Stoll, and removed with him to Albany, on the "Flatts." After Van Corlear's death his widow lived in Schenectady.

Frank C. Bronck, of Amsterdam, N. Y., has in his possession a copy of the inventory of Bronck's personal effects taken in May, 1643, and several other papers. R. Bronck Fish, an attorney in Fultonville, N. Y., owns a silver cup which belonged to Jonas Bronck.

There has been much discussion as to the genealogical origin of Jonas Bronck. Many historians adhere to the belief that he was Dutch, of Swedish extraction, probably from the fact that he came to this country under the protection of the Dutch flag.

The "Magazine of American History," January, 1908, tells us that Jonas Bronck "was one of those worthy but unfortunate Mennonites who were driven from their homes in Holland to Denmark by religious persecution. He . . . gained rapid promotion in the army of the King of Denmark, who was very tolerant towards the sect known as Mennonites. He served as commander in the East Indies until 1638, when, with others of the persecuted he set sail for America, and his name first appears on the records the following year, when he received a large grant of land in Westchester County from the Sachems of Ranachqua."

In the "Bronx Borough Record," December 20, 1902, Wm. R.

Bronk, of the seventh generation of that family, writes: "Of his [Jonas Bronck's] history prior to 1638 little is definitely known. It has been asserted that he was of Swedish or Danish ancestry, but there is little or no direct proof of this. . . . The name Bronck is a well-known Dutch name, and the probabilities all point in the direction of Bronck's having been of Holland descent."

Riker in his *History of Haarlem* says that "Bronck was of a family long distinguished in Sweden though he himself was probably from Copenhagen where some of his family lived." The writer is inclined to the opinion that Bronck comes of Danish stock, because of his intimate association with Kuyter and other Danes, and the fact that the majority of the books in his library were Danish.

The Rev. R. Anderson, pastor of the Danish Church of Our Saviour, in Brooklyn, who has devoted much time to tracing the genealogical tree of Jonas Bronck, is of the opinion that he was a Dane and gives some plausible reasons for forming this belief. "After the Reformation," says Mr. Anderson, "we find in Denmark several priests of the name of Bronck. The name is written Bronck, Brynck, Brunck, and sometimes Bronckel; but Brunck is most common in Danish."

CHAPTER II

MORRISANIA

Colonial and Revolutionary Days—Story of the Public-Spirited and Patriotic Morris Family—Lewis Morris, Signer of the Declaration of Independence, Who Backed up His Signature by Joining the Army with His Three Sons—Gouverneur Morris, Statesman and Diplomat—Land Marks in Morrisania—Foundation of Village in 1848.



LEWIS MORRIS

FOR a quarter of a century the tract of land upon which Jonas Bronck had settled was owned at different times by several of the Dutch pioneers and traders. In 1668 it came into the possession of Samuel Edsall, a beaver maker of New Amsterdam. He held it for two years, then sold it on August 10, 1670, to Colonel Lewis Morris and Captain Richard Morris, both officers in Cromwell's army, who found refuge in Barbados upon the restoration of Charles II. The Morrises were of Welch descent, and their patronym was derived from *Maur Rys*, or Rys the Great, which title was conferred upon Rys, the companion of Strongbow, for valiant service rendered in the latter's expedition against Ireland.

Lewis went to the West Indies, where he purchased a large estate and became prominent in the political affairs of Barbados. He was later joined by his younger brother, Richard, who married there a wealthy lady named Sarah Pole, from whom he received large sugar plantations.

Both brothers agreed to invest in land in New York, and in 1668 Richard and his wife removed to the Dutch Colony, where the Captain purchased Broncksland from Samuel Edsall.

Captain Richard Morris and his wife both died in 1672, leaving behind them an infant son named Lewis. His uncle, Colonel Lewis Morris, then came from Barbados to New York in 1673, and held the estate in trust for the child. He resided in Morrisania, but he purchased some thirty-five hundred acres of land in Monmouth County, New Jersey, upon which he

located iron mills. When the Dutch in 1673 were again masters of New York, Colonel Lewis Morris was forced to surrender his share of the Morrisania property to the victorious Hollanders on the ground that he was an inhabitant of Barbados; but, upon the recapture of New Amsterdam by the English in 1765, it was restored to its rightful owner.

In 1676, Governor Andros granted to Colonel Morris a royal patent to Broncksland and adjacent meadows to the extent of about 1,920 acres, in consideration of which the Colonel was required to pay to James the Duke of York an annuity of five bushels of wheat. A deed confirming the grant was subsequently presented to Colonel Lewis Morris by Shahash and five other Indian sachems.

Upon the death of Colonel Morris in 1691, the property was inherited by Lewis Morris, his nephew, who by a royal patent issued on May 8, 1697, by Governor Fletcher in the name of William III, became the first lord of the manor of Morrisania.

Colonel Lewis Morris was a Quaker and he could not tolerate what he termed his nephew's "many and great miscarryages" toward him and his wife. He accused his nephew of "adhering and advising with those of bad life and conversation." He consequently made his "dearly beloved wife, Mary Morris," sole executrix of his last will and testament. But as the Colonel left no issue, and as his wife died before him, the estate devolved upon the disinherited nephew, Lewis Morris, Senior.

Like most youngsters, past and present, who in their early youth give promise of becoming the most wicked of men, but during their maturity turn out to be virtuous and upright, Lewis Morris became a model man. He achieved the distinction of being the first governor of New Jersey and the first native-born Chief Justice of New York.

Chief Justice Morris upheld the rights of the people and became the foe of tyrannical royal officials. In 1733 he rendered a decision adverse to the interests of Governor Cosby. The Governor accused the Chief Justice of having treated him "with slight, rudeness, and impertinence."

Whereupon Morris replied:

"If judges are to be intimidated so as not to dare to give any opinion but what is pleasing to a *governor*, and agreeable to his private views, the people of this province—who are very much concerned both with respect to

their lives and fortunes in the freedom and independency of those who are to judge them—may possibly not think themselves so secure in either of them as the laws and his Majesty intend they should be. . . . As to my integrity, I have given you no occasion to call it in question. I have been in this office about twenty years. My hands were never soiled by a bribe; nor am I conscious to myself, that power or poverty hath been able to induce me to be partial in the favor of either of them; and as I have no reason to expect any favor of you, so I am neither afraid nor ashamed to stand the test of the strictest inquiry you can make concerning my conduct. I have served the public faithfully, according to the best of my knowledge; and I dare, and do, appeal to it for my justification.”

For this act of “impertinence,” however, he was dismissed from the bench by Governor Cosby, and was replaced by the aristocratic royalist, James De Lancey. Morris then ran for representative in the Assembly in opposition to William Forster, who was supported by the Governor. Despite Cosby’s unfair tactics of depriving the Quakers of their vote, Morris was elected by a majority of eighty, thus indicating that the people were on his side.

When Lewis Morris, Second, called Senior, died in 1746 at the age of seventy-three, the estate was divided into two portions, the Mill Brook having served as the dividing line. The section east of the Mill Brook was given over to his son, Lewis, Third, called Junior; while the remainder of the manor was bequeathed to his wife, Isabella Graham. Upon the death of the latter, Lewis Morris, Junior, who served as a judge in several courts, and as representative of Westchester County in the New York Legislature, came into possession of the entire estate.

Judge Lewis Morris had three sons by his first wife, Elizabeth Staats: namely, Lewis, called the Signer; Staats Long, a general in the British army, and the Honorable Richard Morris; and by his second wife, Sarah Gouverneur, he had one son, the Honorable Gouverneur Morris, and four daughters.

Upon the death of Judge Lewis Morris, Junior, in 1762, the estate was again divided into two portions. The section west of the Mill Brook was bequeathed to Lewis Morris, who was later a signer of that great human document—the Declaration of Independence,—and the easterly portion descended to Staats Long Morris, afterwards a Lieutenant General in the British army and a Governor of Quebec. Upon the removal of Staats Long Morris to Canada, his portion of the patrimony was purchased in 1786 by the Honorable Gouverneur Morris, the distinguished

patriot and statesman, the half-brother of Staats Long and Lewis Morris.

General Lewis Morris, the last manor-lord of Morrisania, was born at Old Morrisania in 1726. He was graduated from Yale College in 1746. During the period prior to the Revolution much of his time was passed in the pursuit of agriculture on his estate at Morrisania, where he surrounded himself with the elegance and luxury of the period. At the beginning of the Revolution he espoused the Whig cause and early in the war was made a Brigadier-General in the Continental army. In 1775 he was elected a member of the Continental Congress from New York, and was sent to Pittsburgh to secure the allegiance of the Indians to the cause of the colonists. He was in attendance at the meeting of the Colonial Congress of the Province of New York at White Plains, July 9, 1776, when the Declaration of Independence was ratified by that body. Thruout Washington's Westchester County campaign, and at the battle of White Plains (October 28, 1776) he was in active service. He also took an important part in the succeeding winter campaign in New Jersey, being present at the battles of Trenton and Princeton. His three eldest sons were enlisted in the American army at the same time.

General Morris died in 1798. The manor-house of Lewis Morris, known as "Christ's Hotel," stood west of Brook Avenue near the Mill Brook, until it was torn down two decades ago by the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad, which had acquired the property.

Gouverneur Morris, the most illustrious of the Morris family, was born at Morrisania, January 31, 1752. In accordance with the wish of Lewis Morris, Junior, as expressed in his will, dated November 19, 1760, namely, that "his son Gouverneur Morris may have the best education that is to be had in England or America," Gouverneur was sent to King's College (now Columbia) from which he was graduated in 1768, at the age of sixteen. His oration on Commencement Day won great applause and a silver medal.

In 1775 he was a delegate to the Provincial Congress of New York, and on July 8th of that year a member of the Committee of Public Safety of Westchester County. He was one of the committee appointed to draft the Constitution of the State of New York, which was adopted in 1777.

He was but twenty-seven years of age when he was appointed by Congress as one of a committee of five to assist General Washington in the reorganization of the army. The committee spent three months with the Commander-in-Chief at Valley Forge, and as a result many reforms were instituted. It was shortly after this, in May, 1780, that he was thrown from his carriage, and his left leg so badly maimed that it had to be amputated. He was



GOUVERNEUR MORRIS MANSION

a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1787, which framed the Constitution of the United States, and to him was assigned the literary revision of that masterful instrument. During the French hostilities he was American Minister to France, and he remained in Paris during the whole period of the Reign of Terror.

In 1799 he was chosen Senator from New York and served until 1803. He was closely associated with Governor George Clinton in the building of the Erie Canal, and was an intimate

friend of General Alexander Hamilton. Gouverneur Morris was with the great statesman during his last moments, and he delivered his funeral oration. In 1809, at the age of fifty-seven, he married Anne Cary Randolph, a sister of John Randolph of Roanoke, and a lineal descendant of Pocahontas. The Gouverneur Morris mansion, built from the design of a French *chateau*, stood nearly opposite Hell Gate, and east of what is now St. Ann's Avenue. It was here that he entertained Washington and numerous French



WM. H. MORRIS MANSION

notables, including Louis Philippe, afterward King of the French. Here, too, Lafayette was entertained in 1824 by his son, Gouverneur Morris, Junior. Until this historic manor-house was razed a few years ago to make room for the terminal of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad, its wide stairway bore marks that were said to have been made by Gouverneur Morris's wooden leg as he hobbled to bed.

Below One Hundred and Sixty-seventh Street, west of Third Avenue, stands the old stone Gate House. This is the oldest

building in Morrisania and the only one that antedates the formation of the village of Morrisania in 1848.

The Wm. H. Morris mansion at One Hundred and Sixty-fifth Street, Findlay and Teller Avenues, was built in 1816, and was recently purchased by the Daughters of Jacob; it is to be remodeled for a synagog.

Just west of the old mansion stands a quaint stone structure



OUTHOUSE, MORRIS FARM

dating from 1792. It was probably an outhouse of the old farm.

Upon the death of Gouverneur Morris in 1816, and of his wife in 1837, the property east of Mill Brook passed into the hands of their son, Gouverneur Morris, Esq., the pioneer railroad builder. In memory of his mother, Anne Cary Randolph, he erected in the year 1841, at St. Ann's Avenue and East One Hundred and Fortieth Street, a church known since as St. Ann's Episcopal Church. In the vaults beneath the old church and adjacent thereto, lie interred the remains of the members of this illustrious family whose mag-

nanimous patriotic services for our country have caused their names to be placed high on the American Roll of Honor.

On a tablet in the recess chancel is inscribed the following:

"THE RELICS OF THE HONORABLE GOUVERNEUR MORRIS, A name illustrious in his country's annals, were laid by his faithful widow."

A tablet on the right side of the chancel bears the following inscription:

GOUVERNEUR MORRIS,
born February 9, 1813,
died August 20, 1888,
Founder of this Parish,

To which he gave church and lands for the
glory of God and in memory of his mother.

Morrisania was the scene of many a skirmish during the Revolutionary War. General William Heath, who was in command of a picket stationed in that section, relates in his *Memoirs* an interesting incident that occurred there. A chain of sentinels had been planted near Bronx Kills, the water passage between Morrisania and Montresor's (now Randall's) Island. The sentinels on the American side had been ordered not to fire at the sentinels on the British side unless the latter began; but the latter were so fond of beginning that shots were frequently exchanged. During an interchange of shots a British officer was wounded. An officer with a flag soon came down the creek and informed the Americans that if their sentinels fired any more the commanding officer of the island would cannonade Colonel Morris's house, in which the officers of the picket were quartered. General Heath sent back the reply that "the American sentinels were instructed not to fire unless they were fired on; that such was their conduct, and as to cannonading Colonel Morris's house, they could act their pleasure."

For a time all firing ceased until a raw Scotch sentinel was planted who soon discharged his musket at an American sentinel. The shots were instantly returned; whereupon a British officer called to the American officers observing that he thought there was to be no more firing between the sentinels. When informed that the offender was on his side, he immediately apologized and relieved the Scotchman. Thereafter both sides were so civil that when a British sentinel sent over to the Americans for a chew of

tobacco, he got a thick quid, and, after taking his bite, he sent the remainder back.

The little semi-circular redoubt still stands in the southeast corner of Woodlawn Cemetery, and is pointed out as having been erected under the personal direction of General Heath. Its guns once commanded the crossing over the Bronx River at Williams's Bridge where the original Boston Post Road, laid out in 1672, wound up from King's Bridge and extended on thru Eastchester and New Rochelle, and so on to Boston.

Major Henly, a promising young officer of General Heath's staff, lost his life in an attack on the British garrison on Montresor's Island, September 24, 1776. Colonel Jackson, the commander of the party, led the way in his boat, under cover of darkness, not heeding the firing of the pickets. The officers and their men jumped ashore and rushed upon the camp; but, overpowered by superior numbers, they were obliged to retreat to their boats. The Americans lost twenty-two men, including Major Henly. The attack failed because the officers of the remaining boats did not follow the boat of their commander. For this cowardice, they were afterwards court-martialled and cashiered.

Pending its decision during the session of 1790 as to the location of a permanent seat of government, Congress received a petition headed by the signature of Gouverneur Morris, which strongly urged the selection of Morrisania as the national capital. Many excellent reasons were submitted for the adoption of this site—the well-drained condition of the land, and consequent freedom from swamps; and the proximity to so great an industrial and political center as New York. But the proposal at once aroused all the political prejudices and petty jealousies of various sections of the country. In order to quiet this feeling and restore harmony thruout the land, Philadelphia was picked as a compromise, since it was thought that the selection of this site would cause least friction.

Various efforts were made to induce people to settle in The Bronx. In 1841, Jordan L. Mott, a pioneer from Manhattan, bought a small tract of land, bounded by Third Avenue, One Hundred and Thirty-fourth Street and the Harlem River. Here he erected a foundry and built an attractive residence. He then extended his possessions and encouraged others to settle there. He called the section owned by him Mott Haven, and the canal

extending from the Harlem River to One Hundred and Thirty-eighth Street, commenced by him in 1850, the Mott Haven Canal.

It was not until 1848, however, that any concerted effort was made to colonize The Bronx. A number of citizens, chiefly mechanics and laborers, had met at various times to discuss the advisability of building homes of their own on land within commuting distance of the city and possessing at the same time the advantages offered by the country. It was also figured that the children would derive incalculable benefit from the pure air and the quiet healthful environment so woefully lacking in the city.

Tho the project met with ridicule from the skeptical and timid, the enthusiasm of the leaders of the movement did not wane. Following the third meeting, a committee of three, consisting of Jordan L. Mott, Charles W. Haughton, and Nicholas McGraw, was selected to act merely as purchasing agents of the would-be settlers.

After a long search, it was found that the Gouverneur Morris property, embracing two hundred acres of well-drained land, was the most suitable for their purpose. The purchase price was \$37,622—or about \$173 an acre. When the avenues and streets were laid out, there were 167 acres for development.

Within two years the land was clear of debt and its name was changed from New Village to Morrisania, in honor of its former landlord. The total population of this village in 1850 was 961 persons in 149 dwellings. Between 1856 and 1868 no less than eighteen distinct communities, including Mott Haven, Port Morris, East and West Morrisania, Eltona, Woodstock, Bensonia, Highbridgeville, Claremont, Belmont, Grovehill, and Melrose grew up around Morrisania, and were incorporated with it into one village.

One of the curiosities of Morrisania was the "Huckleberry Road" with its bob-tail cars. Old residents never tire of relating some of the peculiar experiences they went thru when this ancient horse-car line was in operation. It is said that whenever the driver hit up the horses to urge them on to greater speed, the car would jump the track; whereupon the conductor would request the gentlemen to alight and help lift the car back upon the tracks. The stoppages were so frequent that the passengers found ample time to pick huckleberries along the road.

Prior to the advent of horse cars, a stage coach would carry passengers to the Harlem Bridge, where they could continue downtown by means of either the Third Avenue horse cars or the steamboat.

Today the brilliantly lighted cars of the Union Railroad Company, whose splendid trolley system may well stand as a model for other and less enterprising communities, has been one of the chief factors in the upbuilding of The Bronx.

CHAPTER III

DEVELOPMENT OF THE BRONX

What Organized and Intelligent Effort has Accomplished—The Rush of Capital and Steady Flow of Population.



RIOR to its annexation to New York City in 1874, the section which then comprised The Bronx lying west of the Bronx River, covered an area of but 12,317 acres and consisted of fifty-two sparsely settled villages and hamlets with an approximate population of 33,000. In 1895, the territory east of the Bronx River, comprising 14,500 acres was annexed to the Borough, making a total of 26,817 acres in all, or 42 square miles of territory.

Since the Borough's annexation to New York City in 1874, when it became familiarly known as the "North Side," its growth has been marvelous. From a population of 33,000 it grew to 430,980 in 1910, as shown by the latest census. This is an increase of more than 1,300 per cent in thirty-six years—a record probably never equalled in the history of the world.

Since the Federal census was taken in 1910 the Health Department estimated that the population of The Bronx by the middle of this year (1913) would be 583,981. If the same increase continues for the next seven years—and it is safe to say it will—The Bronx should have by 1920 a population of at least a million.

The following table, based on the Federal census of 1910, has been compiled by a well-known statistician. It shows the estimated population of The Bronx up to and including the year 1920.

Year	Bronx
1910	430,980
1911	483,000
1912	531,000
1913	590,000
1914	640,000
1915	690,000
1916	740,000
1917	790,000

1918	840,000
1919	890,000
1920	950,000

In compiling these figures, a thoro study of the conditions likely to be affected by the new rapid transit routes was carefully considered. While it is generally conceded that railroads, more than any other combination of forces, are responsible for the civilization and growth of a country, experience has proved that its success is not always assured unless it has the encouragement and aid of an efficient and wide-awake administration. And in this respect The Bronx has been most fortunate; for there can be no question that the rapid development and present prosperity of the Borough is the direct consequence of former Borough President Haffen's able and efficient administration and wisely directed efforts, as well as of the present Borough President, Cyrus C. Miller's intelligent management of local affairs.

The North Side Board of Trade and the Taxpayers' Alliance of the Borough of The Bronx, the latter having thirty-seven local associations affiliated with it, have both taken a lively interest in the welfare of the Borough, and thru their united efforts many public improvements have been pushed to a successful issue.

The North Side Board of Trade was organized March 6, 1894. At the time of its formation the population of The Bronx was about 90,000, but its influence was soon manifested and it has since been an important factor in the commercial development of The Bronx. With the consolidation in the Greater City, its growth has been steady and continuous, and today, it is one of the most influential bodies in the upper section of Greater New York. Its membership numbers more than five hundred men who represent the very heart of the business life of the great North Side. The Board has helped to obtain many public improvements for the people of this Borough; nothing escapes their vigilance where the public welfare is concerned. On October 28, 1911, the cornerstone of the new North Side Board of Trade building, situated at Third and Lincoln Avenues and East One Hundred and Thirty-seventh Street, was laid by the late Mayor Gaynor. This is the most magnificent building in the Borough. The officers are:

William W. Niles, President.

Charles W. Bôgart, Treasurer.

Charles E. Reid, Secretary.

Vice Presidents: Ernest Hall, Joseph A. Goulden, Adolph G. Hupfel, John J. Amory, Charles W. Bogart, John Claflin, Henry Lewis Morris, Louis F. Haffen, Charles A. Berrian, J. Homer Hildreth.

Board of Directors: Edward B. Boynton, Thomas J. Quinn, J. Clarence Davies, John De Hart, Herbert A. Knox, Charles E. Reid, Dr. William A. Boyd, Michael J. Sullivan, Richard W. Lawrence, Louis F. Haffen, Matthew Anderson, Israel C. Jones, Fred W. Hottenroth, Louis F. Kuntz, Martin Walter, J. Harris Jones, Douglas Mathewson, Thomas J. Higgins, Arthur Knox, Cornelius J. Earley, John F. Steeves, Olin J. Stephens, James L. Wells, Ernest Hall, Charles W. Bogart, Joseph A. Goulden, William W. Niles, J. Homer Hildreth, William S. Germain, Theodore Trimmer.

The Taxpayers' Alliance was founded in 1894, shortly after the establishment of local self-government in The Bronx, and owes its formation to the Twenty-third Ward Property Owners' Association, now known as the "Bronx County Property Owners' Association." This worthy body believed that by cooperating with other local improvement associations, and by uniting, it would accomplish more good for the uplifting of The Bronx than by working independently. Thru the earnest efforts of Colonel Goulden, a meeting was arranged at the Fordham Club, on the evening of December 15, 1894, to which representatives from all the other local associations were invited. The consolidation plan met with instant favor, and as a result the Taxpayers' Alliance of the Borough of The Bronx was launched, with Colonel Goulden as its first president.

The six original associations forming this alliance were:

The Twenty-third Ward Property Owners' Association.

The Fordham Club.

West Farms Local Improvement Association.

Kingsbridge Property Owners' Association.

Property Owners' Association Vyse Estate and vicinity.

The Fox Estate Property Owners' Association.

The combined membership of these six organizations numbered about 600. Today the Alliance has thirty-seven local associations affiliated with it, and a membership of more than 8,000.

The list of the associations is made up as follows:

Twenty-third Ward Taxpayers' Association.

Fordham Club.

Belmont Association.
Unionport Association.
West Morrisania Club.
West Farms Association.
Woodlawn Association.
Westchester Association.
Bedford Park Association.
City Island Association.
Van Nest Association.
Westchester Improvement Company.
Borough Club.
Casanova Association.
Springhurst Association.
Fordham Association.
Morris Heights Association.
Tremont Association.
Williamsbridge Improvement Association.
Wakefield Association.
Vyse Estate Association.
Mapes Estate Association.
East Morrisania Property Owners' Association.
East Tremont Taxpayers' Association.
Kingsbridge Association.
Throgg's Neck Association.
Protective Association, Mapes Estate.
Riverside Association.
Spuyten Duyvil Association.
Fox Estate and Vicinity Association.
Claremont Heights Property Owners' Association.
City Island Board of Trade.
Highbridge Taxpayers' Association.
Tax and Rentpayers' Alliance of Wakefield.
Mosholu Parkway North Association.
Van Cortlandt Association.

The officers of the Taxpayers' Alliance are:

President, George M. S. Schulz.

Vice Presidents: Harry Robitzek, James B. Powers, William W. Niles, A. C. Hottenroth, Charles W. Bogart, Louis F. Haffen, Col. Jos. A. Goulden, William S. Germain, Max Just.

Treasurer, Carl W. Schmidtke.

Secretary, Philip J. McKinley.

That the Taxpayers' Alliance has been of incalculable benefit to the citizens of The Bronx no one will deny. There has not been a public improvement in which the hand of the Alliance cannot be traced. From its very inception, the chief aim of the organization has been to further the general interest and promote the welfare of the Borough, and to attain the greatest good for the greatest number.

The Association of the Bar of the County of Bronx, Inc., is the only lawyers' organization in the new county. It was incorporated in 1902 as the Association of the Bar of the Borough of the Bronx in the City of New York, the name was changed in February, 1913.

It was a committee of the Association that drafted the first proposed Bronx County Act back in 1904. Since then this body has steadily kept in the fighting line. When the present act became a law in 1912, a committee of seven was delegated for the inevitable legal struggle to maintain the constitutionality of the legislation. The Association, thru its committee, was the sole advocate of the entire act before the courts. When the decision went contrary, the question was speeded to the Court of Appeals. There the brief filed on behalf of the Association was largely embodied in the opinion that preserved Bronx County.

The membership is 150 and increasing. Any lawyer in good standing, residing or practising in the City of New York, is eligible for membership. Admission fee and dues are moderate. Advantages offered are many, including the use of a large law library in the comfortable headquarters at 1187 Washington Avenue. A regular meeting is held the second Friday evening of the month, at which there is discussion and action on matters of importance to the profession and the county. Prominent men frequently attend and deliver addresses. Active officials and committees keep the general spirit keyed high.

The former presidents are W. Stebbins Smith, J. Homer Hildreth, Arthur C. Butts, Douglas Mathewson, and Charles P. Hallock.

The officers are:

President: Louis O. Van Doren.

Vice Presidents: Maurice S. Cohen and John Davis.

Secretary: J. Philip Van Kirk.

Treasurer: Arthur L. Howe.

Chairman of Executive Committee: Henry K. Davis.

Looking back a quarter of a century, and comparing conditions then with those of today, we cannot help but marvel at the remarkable growth of the Borough in commerce, population and achievement during that short period. From what was formerly a slow, slumbering unprogressive community, there has sprung



HOME STREET, LOOKING EAST FROM UNION AVENUE IN 1883

up a great, vigorous and flourishing cosmopolitan community, which today, if it were a separate and distinct city, would rank in population as the seventh city in the United States, and the third in the State of New York.

What may be heralded as the birth of the new Bronx began in 1895, when the maps of the streets and highways west of the Bronx River were completed. The Bronx at that time contained about 100,000 inhabitants. In five years the population doubled,

the census report of 1900 showing that there were 200,507 persons residing in the Borough. This gain, however enormous, but faintly foreshadowed what was to come, when, in the next decade—the period of 1900-1909—was disclosed an increase of 230,473 inhabitants. Thus The Bronx had more than quadrupled its population in less than the number of years allotted to a generation. This period of 1900-1909 has been in every respect one of unparalleled progress and prosperity. It is a history crowned with auspicious events, such as the opening of the subway, building of tunnels, construction of bridges over the Harlem and other waterways, and City Borough undertakings of the first rank. The projected Broadway-Lexington Avenue Subway will undoubtedly cause the denizens of congested Manhattan to migrate to the more spacious and comfortable Bronx.

In building, The Bronx has made greater progress than any other community in the country, except, perhaps, Seattle. In 1911, this Borough was the third greatest building community in the United States, Manhattan ranking first and Chicago second.

From 1881 to 1910, there have been \$360,000,000 invested in Bronx building operations, and from 1881 to 1890, \$27,000,000 were expended; \$93,000,000 in the period from 1891 to 1900, and \$240,000,000 from 1901 to 1910. The outlay for 1911 was \$22,837,060, and that of 1912, \$36,049,870.

While the building record last year was of unusual proportions, experts assert their belief that more buildings will be erected in The Bronx this coming year than ever before. From January 1 to March 18, 1913, plans for 204 new buildings, at a cost of \$5,624,416, and alterations on 392, at a cost of \$244,467, have been filed.

The assessed valuation of the taxable real estate in the Borough has also shown tremendous strides. In round numbers the figures are as follows: In 1880, \$23,000,000; in 1890, \$45,000,000; in 1900, \$123,000,000; in 1910, \$494,000,000; in 1911, \$605,000,000; and in 1912, \$616,486,898.

CHAPTER IV

A CITY WITHIN A CITY

How the Child Grew up a Giant—The Past Speaks in Thunder Tones of the Prosperity Advancing Years Bring to the Home, the Merchant and the Manufacturer—What Rapid Transit Stands for in the Growth of a Metropolis.



MARVELOUS as has been the growth of The Bronx in the last decade, it is very little compared to what the near future has in store, awaiting the completion of new subways and rapid transit lines. With better transit facilities, territory in outlying sections, heretofore inaccessible, will be at the disposal of men of moderate means who will build homes which may be easily reached from their places of business in the metropolis. New York City is daily becoming more congested and the overflow of population must inevitably find its way to nearby suburbs. It is only a question of a few years when the entire lower section of Manhattan will be devoted exclusively to business.

That the Borough of The Bronx will draw the greater share of this influx, needs no prophet to foretell. The close proximity of The Bronx to Manhattan, and the many substantial bridges which span the Harlem River and practically extend the streets of Manhattan into The Bronx, give it decided advantages over the other boroughs. Moreover, it is admirably situated; it covers an area double that of Manhattan; and it needs but the magic touch of better transportation facilities to make it the Empire City of the future. This is no idle boast, for The Bronx is on the brink of another evolution, and history is sure to repeat itself. Few dreamed thirty years ago that the region north of the Harlem River, known in the earlier days as the "Annexed District," would ever be the giant city it is today. And it will continue to exceed the expectations of even the flightiest prognosticators, as it is at present only at the beginning of its greatness.

Men of capital and keen business foresight who have made a study of realty conditions say that there has never been a more

opportune time to buy real estate in The Bronx than the present; particularly now that the routes of the new subway and rapid transit lines have been definitely settled. Ground has already been broken by the city for its Lexington Avenue route, which when completed, will tap a territory unequaled in beauty and in salutary and sanitary conditions. Nothing but the upheaval of the continent or other remote catastrophe which no man can foresee can check the stupendous improvements planned for the next decade.



OLD VYSE MANSION

Let us for a moment glance into the future and see what wonderful transformation is to take place in The Bronx during the intervening period. What a wonderful vision we behold! Thruout the Borough, from the Harlem River on the south to the city line on the north, the Sound on the east, and the Hudson River on the west, we see a complete network of subways, elevated and surface roads, which spread out like the all-embracing arteries of the body.

The countless acres of unimproved property which for years

lay dormant in the outlying districts are mapped out into tree-lined streets and avenues. Thousands of cozy and attractive little homes, which rent at low figures, are now occupied by men of moderate means, whose wish it is to live in a quiet, select neighborhood where the children may enjoy the blessings of pure air, good schools and delightful parks and playgrounds.

The forty miles of navigable water front are filled with pleasure and merchant craft of all tonnage—a great boon to both the manufacturer and the consumer, for they can receive and ship their products, either crude or manufactured, by either rail or water, with diminished cost of handling, and with increased profits to both. Electricity has banished smoke from the city and the great towers of the central town and college hall dazzle in the sunlight. There is a constant flutter in the air of the aeroplanes and airships carrying passengers and mail. All about us are bewildering changes. Industry and transportation have been revolutionized; and progress, peace and contentment reign everywhere.

Does not this vision of future development inspire enthusiasm, devotion and patriotism in the citizen of the Borough of The Bronx?

That The Bronx has grown beyond all precedent, either in this State or elsewhere, during the sixteen years since its consolidation, needs no further comment. Eleven years hence, it will rank with the sixteen world cities having a population of a million or over.

Up to April 19, 1912, The Bronx was the only one of the five boroughs comprising the City of New York that was not a separate and distinct county. On that date an act was passed in the Legislature creating the County of Bronx, subject to a referendum to the voters of the Borough. The question "Shall the territory within the Borough of The Bronx be erected into the County of Bronx?" was accordingly submitted to the voters at the general election in November, 1912, and a majority of the votes cast were in favor of the creation of the county.

The constitutionality of the act was questioned on the grounds that the Legislature had no power to submit the question to the voters, since New York State being a representative democracy, the people of the State act thru their representatives in the Legislature; and secondly, that the question should have been submitted to the voters of the entire County of New York, instead of

only to the voters of the Borough of The Bronx. The act was declared unconstitutional by the Appellate Divisions of the Supreme Court of the State of New York, but the decision was reversed, on March 21, 1913, by the Court of Appeals.

In an administrative way, the creation of the County of Bronx means, that The Bronx will have its own courts; its own offices for recording deeds, mortgages, and other papers affecting real and personal property; its own offices where wills of its residents can be probated; its own Sheriff's and County Clerk's offices.

The offices filled under the Bronx County Act at the last election were: County Judge, L. G. Gibbs, for a term of six years; Surrogate, G. M. Schulz, six years; District Attorney, Francis Martin, four years; Sheriff, J. F. O'Brien, four years; County clerk, J. V. Ganley, four years; and Register, Edward Polak, four years. The salary of each of these is \$10,000. There will be a Commissioner of Jurors, at a salary of \$5,000 a year, and a Public Administrator, at \$4,000 a year.

The construction of the New York, Westchester and Boston Railway, which penetrates the heart of the East Bronx, is the first step toward solving the local transit problem. By the opening of this four-track rapid transit line, 5,300 acres of practically undeveloped territory, lying north of Bronx Park and west of Pelham Bay Park and east of Van Cortlandt, which had absolutely no railroad nor rapid transit facilities for passenger traffic, have been made available for residential and manufacturing purposes. The system begins at Lincoln Avenue, between One Hundred Thirty-second Street and tracks of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad, where it connects with the Second and Third Avenue Elevated Railways.

After leaving the Harlem River, the stations along the line are located at Port Morris, Casanova, Hunt's Point, Westchester Avenue, One Hundred Eightieth Street, Morris Park, Pelham Parkway, Gun Hill Road, Baychester Avenue and Dyre Avenue, which is the last station within the city limits and the end of the five-cent-fare zone. Mount Vernon has five stations. At Columbus Avenue Junction, a branch diverges from the main line, and passing thru the easterly end of Mount Vernon, runs thru Wykogyl in the northern section of New Rochelle and thru the beautiful Quaker Ridge section to Scarsdale and White Plains, the latter being the terminus of this part of the line.

The main line passes thru North Pelham, New Rochelle, Larchmont, Mamaroneck, Harrison and Rye to Port Chester.

The New York, Westchester and Boston Railway is the most modern and up-to-date system in railroad construction. From its roadbed to its cars and stations, its architecture, workmanship and materials are of the best and highest standard. The entire line is equipped with all-steel motor passenger coaches, each having a seating capacity for seventy-eight persons.

The new transfer station located at One Hundred Eightieth Street and Morris Park Avenue will connect with the West Farms Branch of the Interborough and will become the geographical center for the distribution of city and suburban traffic. Provision has also been made for the Pelham Bay section of the Lexington Avenue Subway to connect at the Westchester Avenue station, in The Bronx, thus affording an opportunity for the exchange of passenger traffic for all points.

The station occupies a space approximately 550 feet in length and 250 feet in width. Both entrances and exits are on the street level, and the platforms for receiving and discharging passengers are elevated above the street, conveniently arranged to expedite the transfer from one system to another.

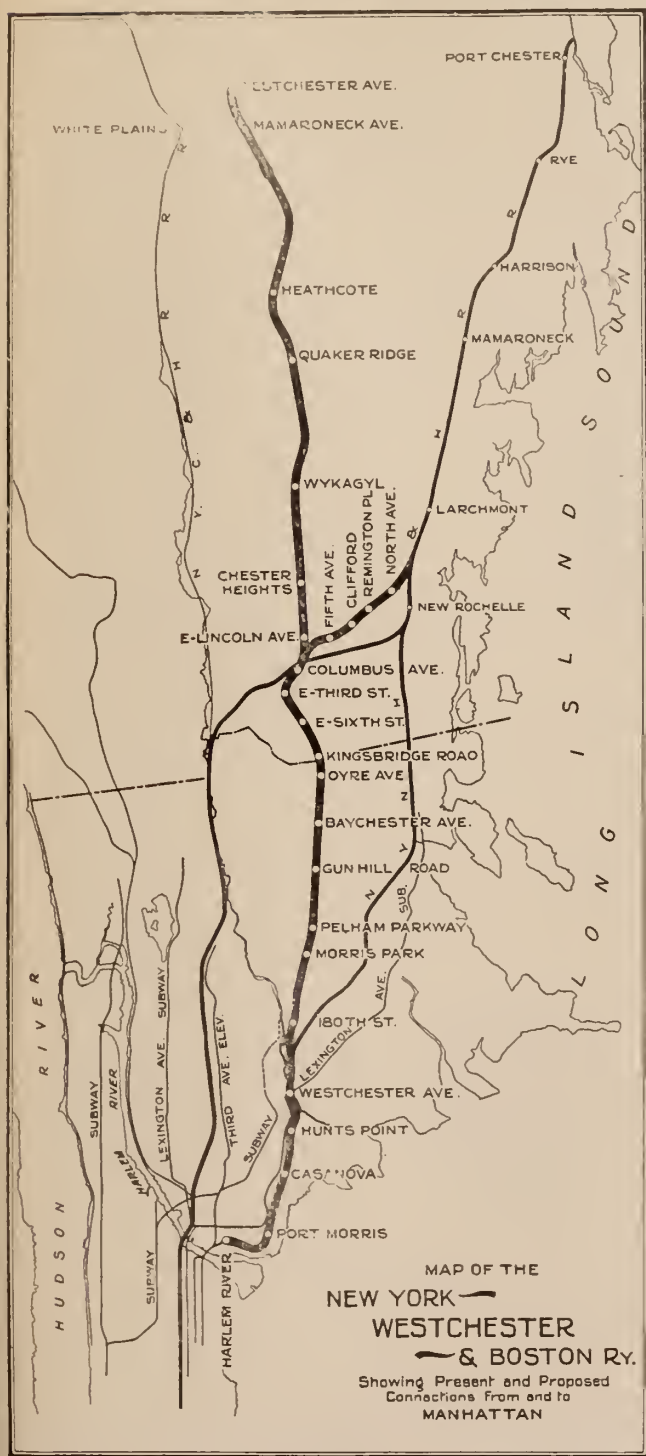
The ground floor has been so designed that a space is reserved on each side of the entrance to the station from Morris Park Avenue, which can be converted into retail stores on the design of an arcade, should the development of the section in the vicinity of the station later warrant such an improvement.

The Interborough Rapid Transit Company, upon the completion of the Broadway and West Farms extensions of the subway, started the "Green Lines" of the new crosstown system for the purpose of carrying passengers to the subways, and transferring them to the trunk lines of the company, for a three-cent fare.

On the extreme westerly side of the Borough is the Main Line and Putnam Division of the New York Central Railroad. These lines accommodate residents of Highbridge, Morris Heights, University Heights, Kingsbridge, Spuyten Duyvil, Riverdale, Mount Saint Vincent, Van Cortlandt and Mosholu.

The northwestern section of the Borough is also tapped by the Broadway branch of the subway up to Van Cortlandt Park (Two Hundred Forty-second Street and Broadway), where the terminals of five trolley lines feed the branch from the north and

The "WESTCHESTER" is



The shortest and quickest route with frequent train service and low fares to Suburban Homes in the Upper Bronx, Mount Vernon, Pelham, New Rochelle and White Plains.

✕ ✕

Send for booklet and set of attractive picture post cards.

✕ ✕

Fast freight service, Pier 39 (Old Pier 50 East River) or Harlem River Station, to Wykagyl, (Northern New Rochelle), Heathcote (Scarsdale) and White Plains.

✕ ✕

A postal card or request by 'phone will bring a call from the Traveling Freight Agent.

✕ ✕

Advertise your business in "WESTCHESTER" Coaches and Stations. If it pays National Advertisers—why not you?

✕ ✕

Our Advertising Agent is at your service.

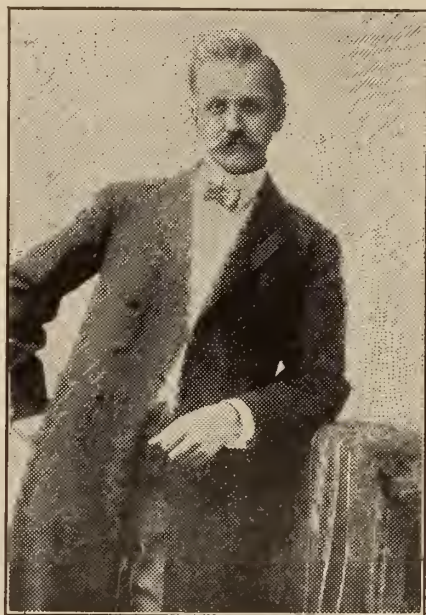
✕ ✕

Address
INFORMATION BUREAU,
Room 22,
180th St. Station, Bronx,
or
37 Lawton St., New Rochelle.

✕ ✕

New York,
Westchester &
Boston
Railway Company

Bird's Business Institute



GEO. W. BIRD, FOUNDER

F. L. BIRD, Propr. GEO. WOLF, Principal

A-Re-Co. Building

391-EAST 149th STREET, COR. 3rd AVENUE

ALSO

Webster Ave. & Fordham Road
Cor. 190th St. NEW YORK



Shorthand

Typewriting Bookkeeping

OLIN J. STEPHENS, Inc.

Five Bronx Yards

COAL



WOOD

Phone 4500 Melrose

Prompt and Careful Deliveries

east. This branch is also used by the residents of Yonkers and the suburbs.

Jerome Avenue will be equipped with three extensions of the Manhattan Elevated and Subway Systems. Under the hill just south of Highbridge, on the banks of the Harlem River, a tunnel will be bored to Jerome Avenue for the extensions of the Sixth and Ninth Avenue Elevated Lines. These lines will meet the Lexington Avenue Subway extension and all three will use the elevated structure up Jerome Avenue to Woodlawn.

At present the residents of the Williamsbridge, Wakefield, Bronxwood Park, Westchester and other northern districts of The Bronx, reach the West Farms terminal of the subway by trolley. To eliminate the double fare and to provide better facilities for the residents, the subway will be extended up White Plains Avenue to Williamsbridge.

The new Broadway-Lexington Subway will aid materially the development of The Bronx. Ground was broken in Manhattan in November, 1911, and in The Bronx at Mott Avenue north of East One Hundred Thirty-eighth Street, on December 7, 1911. The subway, it is expected, will be in operation in three years. It is to be built jointly by the City of New York and the Interborough Rapid Transit Company, and is to be equipped by the company.

The line will start in lower Broadway and at Forty-second Street it will swing into Lexington Avenue to East One Hundred Thirty-fifth Street, The Bronx. At this point it will divide into two branches: the River and Jerome Avenue branch and the Southern Boulevard and Westchester Avenue branch. The River and Jerome Avenue line will be underground as far as River Avenue and East One Hundred Fifty-seventh Street, from which point it will be elevated to Woodlawn Road. The Southern Boulevard and Westchester Avenue line will remain underground as far as Whitlock Avenue south of Westchester Avenue, thence elevated to Pelham Bay Park.

CHAPTER V

BIG INDUSTRIES

Where Men and Women Shop—The Facilities Offered by Traction Companies—
Proposed Improvements.



LIKE all large cities, The Bronx has its business centers. It is in these shopping districts that property shows the greatest increase in values, pays the best rentals, provides the best investment, and is most in demand. The junction of One Hundred Forty-ninth Street and Third Avenue is, without doubt, the most important district of the most northern borough. Not only is it the transfer point of the West Farms subway and elevated railroads, but practically every trolley car operated in The Bronx passes thru this point. It is also the recognized shopping district of the Borough. Twenty-five years ago lots could be bought here for \$6,000; today they bring that much rental per annum. Here are located department stores and other up-to-date business establishments that compare favorably with the largest in Manhattan, and no less than five first-class playhouses bid for the amusement seekers' patronage in this particular neighborhood.

Only a few years ago, theater-goers were obliged to ride downtown in order to attend a high-class production. It was generally accepted that no first-class theater could be made to pay in The Bronx. How far this belief was from fact may be judged by the success our theatrical enterprises have achieved. During the last five years more than \$3,000,000 have been invested in amusement structures here. There are one hundred and forty-seven amusement places in the Borough, the list including every variety from the home of serious drama to the "nickel" and open-air playhouse.

The next busiest center is in Tremont. This upper middle section of the Borough has shown extraordinary development, and there are now in course of construction one hundred and ten buildings, mainly apartment houses. Tremont Avenue, its main thoro-

fare, extends from Harlem River to the Long Island Sound, and is destined to become one of the leading highways of the Borough. The blocks from Webster to Third Avenues are given over entirely to business establishments and are veritable bee hives of activity. The third-tracking of the Second and Third Avenue Elevated Railroads, and the branch connecting the New York, Westchester & Boston Railroad will also materially help the development of that entire section.

The third important thoroughfare is McKinley Square, located at One Hundred Sixty-ninth Street and Boston Road.

The crosstown trolley line opened last year by the Union Railroad Company, starting from Washington Bridge and running



JUNCTION 149TH STREET AND THIRD AVENUE

east thru One Hundred Sixty-seventh and One Hundred Sixty-ninth Streets to McKinley Square, thence to Westchester, and terminating at Clason's Point, has given new impetus to values along its entire route and has added to its population, as has also the new One Hundred Forty-ninth Street crosstown line, recently opened.

Other centers of note are: the junction of One Hundred Thirty-eighth Street and Willis Avenue; Westchester, Prospect and Longwood Avenues; Westchester Avenue of the Southern Boulevard and West Farms Road, and the intersection of Boston Road, Tremont Avenue and West Farms Road. This last center is sure to develop and it will even rival One Hundred Forty-ninth Street as it is practically the geographical center of the Borough. Almost all the important arteries running east and west, north and south connect at this point.

MINER'S **IN THE** **BRONX**

THE THEATRE OF INNOVATIONS

Third Ave. & 156th St. Tel. 1023 Melrose

ACME THEATRE CO., Owners

EDWIN D. MINER, General Manager

**The Only Playhouse in the Bronx, Devoted to
HIGH CLASS BURLESQUE AND MUSICAL ATTRACTIONS**



Only the Best & Most Wholesome Attractions Staged in this Theatre

All casts are headed by Leading Comedians and Mirth Makers and the Chorus includes the Most Beautiful Girls on the Burlesque Stage

This Theatre has a seating capacity of 1,800, and is absolutely Fireproof Special attention is given to the comfort of ladies. Polite and attentive ushers and attendants always at your service.

MATINEE EVERY DAY. Prices 10, 15, 25, 30 and 50 cts.

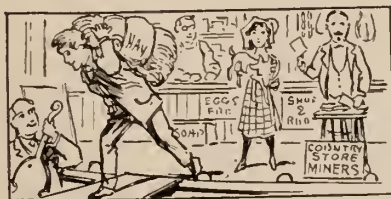
SOME OF MINER'S

ORIGINAL AND FAMOUS

INNOVATIONS

High Class Novelty Burlesque

Presents



Our Country Store

After the regular performance the curtain rises—on the Country Store—A great variety of merchandise is on display. Girls selected from the chorus, and garbed as demure country

maidens, are seen behind the counters—and present the entire contents of this well-stocked store to the patrons of this theatre as their names are read together with a description of the gifts they are to receive—Twenty-five names are selected from coupons which have been filled in by the holder at the time of entering the theatre—Ask for your coupon. If your name is called, just step up on the stage and receive a most welcome assortment of either Household Goods, Edibles, Clothing, Horses, Wagons, Goats, Sheep, Cows, Chickens, Turkeys, etc. Oh, Yes! These are absolutely given away free of charge.



Get the Hook!



Amateur Night

From Clog Dancing to Grand Opera!

A side-splitting session with Embryo Actors recruited from those who "Think they can act," and who strive to win your approval together with

the prize money offered by this theatre for the most successful candidates. HAVE YOU EVER SEEN AN AMATEUR GET THE HOOK?



Wrestling



Wrestling

These wrestling matches by the top-notchers and head liners in their profession—Under the personal supervision and direction of Mr. George Bothner, Champion Lightweight Wrestler of the World—are marvels of scien-

tific skill and most interesting to even those who have not cultivated a liking for this class of sport.



High Class Novelty Burlesque

The Bronx is truly undergoing Aladdin-like changes. One has but to step around the corner to note some transformation that has, mushroom-like, made its appearance overnight.

Take, for example, the section lying south of Westchester



MCKINLEY SQUARE—169TH STREET AND BOSTON ROAD

Avenue and the Southern Boulevard and see what miracles have been wrought there. Less than half a dozen years ago this region was but sparsely settled with a dozen or more neglected estates scattered over its large territory; today it is teeming with activity, and the old mansions which were once the country seats of promi-

nent families have been swept away, and upon their sites have been erected hundreds of handsome brick one-, two- and three-family homes, and rows upon rows of beautiful apartment houses of the most modern and high-class type.

The American Real Estate Company, Henry Morgenthau Company, Geo. F. Johnson, and James F. Meehan, four of the largest operators and home-makers in the Bronx, purchased practically all of the property embracing what is generally known as the Hunt's Point section. For years after their purchases, this section was in a state of chaos; rocks were being blasted, streets were



BOSTON ROAD, SOUTH FROM 166TH STREET IN 1883

being laid out, sewers were being constructed and a total of upwards of one million dollars were spent by these owners in transforming this territory into city property. It is said that the buildings which they erected in that section, can house more than one hundred thousand persons.

A late purchase of the American Real Estate Company was the ninety-three acres of the Watson estate lying just north of Westchester Avenue and east of the Bronx River. The property is located on high ground and contains about twelve hundred city lots.

Other sections which are steadily growing and undergoing transformation are the districts known as Bedford Park and Woodlawn Heights. The latter occupies a unique location, for while it is within the city limits and enjoying all the improvements of municipal ownership, it is still closely allied with Yonkers, so that in a measure it might almost be classed with the latter. Topographically the ground lies high and the outlook in every direction



FOREST AVENUE, SOUTH FROM HOME STREET IN 1883

is extensive. To the east is the valley of the Bronx River, while to the north the land slopes gradually upward. To the south is Woodlawn Cemetery and to the west Van Cortlandt Park. The excellent service furnished by the New York and Harlem division of the New York Central & Hudson River Railroad makes it easy of access, and the trolley line running along McLean Avenue brings Yonkers within a short riding distance. There is also a trolley line on Webster Avenue parallel to the railroad tracks. This sec-

J. Clarence Davis

BRONX BOROUGH REAL ESTATE

149th St. & 3rd Ave. - Tele. 3462 Melrose.

Branch 156 B'way, - Tele. 4891 Cortlandt.

American Real Estate Company

Founded 1888

Capital and Surplus over \$2,000,000

Assets over \$25,000,000

THE LARGEST AND OLDEST COMPANY
OPERATING IN BRONX REAL ESTATE

Main Construction Office - - - 989 Southern Boulevard, New York

Uptown Rental Office - - - 985 Southern Boulevard, New York

GENERAL OFFICES

527 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK

ALL POINTS OF THE COMPASS LEAD TO **GILLIGAN'S** WINTER GARDEN



NEW YORK'S
MOST FAMOUS
CABARET

In the Heart
of the Bronx
Lobster Belt
Latest and
Most Popular
Song Hits

PROFESSIONAL
ENTERTAINERS
direct from
Broadway's
Leading
Productions

DANCING
EXCELLENT
CUISINE
Elaborate
CABARET

The happiest combination for the
Grouch or worn out
business man.

Come and Get Acquainted and You'll Join the Regulars 149th St., Just West of 3rd Ave.

We make your Comfort our Hobby

Tel. Melrose 8129 Open Day & Night

CRITERION TAXI SERVICE

**Touring Cars and Taxi Cabs
For All Occasions**

391 East 149th Street

SPECIAL RATES ON Near Third Avenue
Shopping, Theatre Parties
Wedding Calls, Etc. NEW YORK

Telephone, 892 Melrose

MAX DEUTSCH

Graduate N. Y. Podiatrist Society

Ready to Wear Orthopedic
FOOTWEAR

2655 Third Avenue

Bet. 141st and 142d Sts. NEW YORK

MAKER OF
ORTHOFORM SHOES
I RESCRIPTION SHOES

BE A WEISER MAN

—AND—

WEAR WEISER'S CLOTHES

B'way Styles at Bronx Prices

卐 卐

Our Specialties:

\$10.00 \$15.00 \$20.00

卐 卐

Our Men's Furnishing Dept. is
the most complete in the Bronx

WEISER'S

Areco Bldg. 149th St., 3d Ave.

tion differs from the main thorofare, in that only one- and two-family dwellings are being erected. The same conditions prevail in the Bedford Park section.

Crossing over to the easterly section, we come to Throgg's Neck, one of the most attractive shore fronts in The Bronx. There is a great future before it, particularly if the proposed new subway route, which, according to one plan, will have Pelham Park as a terminal, will be carried to completion. One of the first improvements planned, is a shore drive, one hundred feet wide, which will skirt Throgg's Neck.

The water front of The Bronx, aggregating more than forty miles of navigable waters, has added unlimited trade and commerce to the Borough. Almost the entire territory from Highbridge to Hunt's Point has been utilized by railroads, factories and other industrial enterprises requiring shipping facilities along the water front. The Bronx contains seven hundred factories, each large enough to be subject to State supervision and inspection. They give employment to at least thirty-five thousand people.

Among the numerous industries which have contributed toward making The Bronx a manufacturing center of world-wide renown, the manufacture of pianos and organs ranks among the foremost in importance. No less than sixty factories are located within the Borough, which turn out these musical instruments in amazing quantities annually. These are shipped to all quarters of the globe.

The mammoth plant of the American Bank Note Company at Hunt's Point is another institution which employs an army of over two thousand workers. For more than a century this company has been recognized by experts as the leading engraving and printing concern in America, if not in the world. The choice of its present site in the Hunt's Point section of The Bronx was the result of a thoro canvas of all the available sections in Greater New York. Another enormous plant is the De la Vargne Machine Works at the foot of East One Hundred Thirty-eighth Street. Other industries covering acres and doing a large business are the Ward Bread Company, and the lumber, the coal and the brewing companies.

A comparison of the business done during 1912 with that of the previous year by some of the public service corporations will

give one an idea of the immense business transacted in the Borough.

The New York Telephone Company, for example, which has about \$4,000,000 invested in The Bronx, increased its services by installing 4,648 telephones during the past year. On January 1st, 1906, there were but 5,573 telephones in use in The Bronx, while on February 28th, 1913 there were 26,622.

The New York Edison Company is also making large expenditures in The Bronx for the development and improvement of its facilities for furnishing both light and power. The increase in its business during the past year was most remarkable. In 1911 it had 20,148 customers on its books and in 1912 they numbered 28,582.

The Bronx possesses the largest and most perfect plants for the making of ice machines and gas engines. All the five companies which supply gas in the Borough show marked increases in the number of customers supplied during 1912. The Central Union Gas Company alone entered over 7,000 new customers on their books during the year, which brings their total to 87,000 customers.

The annual consumption of coal and the increase from year to year is also a fair barometer of the business activity in The Bronx. In 1912 it reached its record mark of 1,760,000 tons.

Another proof of the growth of the general retail business activity in the Borough is the fact that the National Cash Register Company sold over a thousand additional machines during the last year.

By means of the Harlem River Ship Canal many of the new products of the country are brought nearer to the Bronx Borough.

For the accommodation of business men, manufacturers and merchants, financial institutions of every class, including a National Bank with numerous branches of State Banks and Trust Companies have been established at all convenient points. For the thrifty there are saving banks. All of these institutions are well managed and conducted on safe lines so as to command the full confidence of their customers.

For the very immediate future the following improvements have been contemplated which will add impetus to business growth: Erection of a new station on the New York Central Railroad; change from a two-track to a six-track system on the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad from Harlem River to New

Leading Bronx Stationer

SCHAPIRO'S

The Store that gained its reputation by the quality of merchandise sold there.

Individual Departments (Main Floor)

Commercial Stationery Social Stationery and Fancy Goods Filing Cabinets, Etc.
Artists' Materials Kodaks and Supplies Sporting Goods
Dinner Favors and Prizes for Card Parties, Etc.

OUR TOY DEPARTMENT (2d Floor)

One of the largest and most spacious in the City, devoted to
Imported and Domestic Toys and Dolls Children's Furniture and Wheel Goods
Baby Carriages Trunks, Bags and Valises

Printing Dept. on the Premises

Work of the "Better Kind"—Write or Telephone for our Representative)

3410-12-14 THIRD AVENUE

At 166th St. "L" Station

Telephone Connections to all Departments



"Confidence Not Gained in a Day"
Est. 1880



BRONX LOAN OFFICE

PAWNBROKERS

2794 3d Avenue 2794
Bet. 147th and 148th Sts.



BARGAINS FOR SALE IN

Diamonds, Jewelry, Furs, Clothing

— and —



All Kinds of Merchandise



Telephone, Tremont 1586

Established 1883

HARRY B. SMITH

GENERAL CONTRACTOR

Signs, Picture Frames

Mirrors and Glass a Specialty

4187 Third Avenue, N. Y. BRONX, N. Y.

Between 176th Street and Tremont Avenue

Telephone Melrose 6511

Telephone Bryant 3721

NAT LEWIS,

Exclusive Haberdasher
"The Accommodating Shops"

569 Melrose Avenue
Cor. 150th St.

25 West 42d Street
Opp. Public Library

Open Evenings

MY STORE POLICY: "Every article you buy
here MUST please or you MUST return it."



Tailors of Quality

Bronx \$1.00 Skirt Co.

J. H. WEISS, Proprietor

Skirts to Order \$1.00 up

Suits to Order \$6.00 up

From Your Own Material

2829 THIRD AVENUE

Bet. 143th and 149th Streets

BRONX

THE ONLY AUTO SUPPLY HOUSE IN THE BRONX

D I S T R I B U T O R S

Ford Cars

**AUTOMOBILE
Accessories**

Overland Cars

Simmons Automobile Company

Office and Salesroom

415 East 149th St.

New York

Service Department

2138 Westchester Ave.

Tel. 7774 Melrose

J. GORSE SIMMONS, Pres. and Gen. Mgr

Tel. 74 Westchester

Tel. 4417 Melrose

Jacob Landy
Electrical Contractor

673 Elton Avenue

JUNCTION OF THIRD AVE. & 153d ST.

New York

Light and Power

First Class DENTISTRY

If you want

Good Legal Service,

Good Medical Service,

Good Dental Work

You have to pay a Good Price.

I am the High Priced Dentist
of The Bronx,

But My Services are Worth
all I charge.

Edwin B. Swift, D. D. S.,

2498 DeVoe Terrace

BRONX

The Story of the Bronx

From the Purchase made by the Dutch from the Indians in 1639 to the Present Day

By **STEPHEN JENKINS**

Author of "The Greatest Street in the World—Broadway." 8vo. With over 100
illustrations and maps, \$3 50 net; by mail, \$3.75.

The romantic history of the northern section of Greater New York from the days of Jonas Bronck, after whom the Bronx was named, through the centuries crowded with events that have issued into the present. The geographical landmarks acquire a new significance as around them this accurate historian of local events and conditions weaves the substantial fabric of fact and more sparingly the lighter web of tradition.

G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS, 2-4-6 W. 45th St., New York

Rochelle; proposed New York and New Jersey bridge across the Hudson at One Hundred Forty-ninth Street; the erection of a new Federal building at One Hundred Forty-ninth Street and Mott Avenue, which is to cost over half a million dollars, and is to include the Bronx Central Post Office, the Internal Revenue Bureau, the Treasury and Commerce and Labor Departments; the building of a connecting railroad, connecting Long Island with the Borough by a bridge; the erection of a direct east side subway; the improvement of the splendid water front by increased dock facilities; and the establishment of a public produce market.

The following waterway improvements are now under way or planned: Deepening of Spuyten Duyvil Creek, Harlem River, and Bronx Kills in connection with Barge Canal traffic; widening and deepening of Bronx River and Westchester Creek; plan adopted to make the Hutchinson River 80 to 900 feet wide.

Borough President Cyrus C. Miller proposes a plan for industrial development benefiting directly the area which may be described roughly as lying south and east of a line beginning in the South Bronx at Macomb's Park and running thence easterly across One Hundred Sixty-first Street to Westchester Avenue; thence easterly along Westchester Avenue along West Farms Road and Boston Road to One Hundred Eightieth Street at the easterly boundary of Bronx Park; thence northerly along the eastern boundary of Bronx Park to Bear Swamp Road; thence along Bear Swamp Road to Morris Park Avenue to Stillwell Avenue to Bronx and Pelham Parkway, and from this point east to Long Island Sound.

This district comprises about one-third the area of The Bronx, or about fourteen square miles. It is bordered on the south and east by the Harlem River, Bronx Kills and Long Island Sound, and intersected by Bronx River and Westchester Creek, which run up into the mainland from the Sound. It has a water front seventeen miles long with bays and indentations for the anchorage of ships and the building of docks.

The prime necessity for the whole plan is an industrial railway for freight around the south and east shores of The Bronx, so as to connect all the railroads coming into The Bronx with the dock system planned by Commissioner Tomkins, and by means of spurs, with the factories to be built in the territory described.

This will make it possible for a loaded freight car to come

into The Bronx on any railroad or steamship pier or dock, or to any factory or warehouse that is connected with the railway by a spur.

The Borough President has directed his engineers to draw up tentative plans for the Industrial Railway and has interested men of capital in the plan. One step in this development has been made by the Ryawa Realty Company, which has begun a \$20,000,000 development at the mouth of the Bronx River, similar to the Bush Terminal stores in Brooklyn.

Part of the plan is to have a Union Terminal Market on the line of the Industrial Railway, where food products may be carried by all the railroads and steamships coming to The Bronx and distributed directly and cheaply to the retail dealers of the Borough.

CHAPTER VI

THE STORY OF GREAT BRIDGES

The Water Front That Invites Big Ships from Over the Seven Seas—Early Highways.



MILLIONS of dollars have been spent by the Government in deepening and widening the channels of waterways, and more money is constantly being expended on improvements. The crowding of commerce and the ever growing demand for more docking space in Manhattan will eventually force the city to build substantial wharves and piers along the matchless water front. The opening of the Erie Canal and the Harlem Ship Canal has brought The Bronx and the maritime states of New England into direct water communication with the Great Lakes of the Northwest, and it is only a question of time when the ocean greyhounds will be docking at Port Morris, at which point the East River is deepest. This will save 300 miles of water route, as it will enable steamers to come direct thru Long Island Sound, instead of the Narrows and the Lower Bay.

Our forefathers, as far back as 1693, saw the necessity of a bridge across the Harlem River. Since then nearly every leading thoroughfare of Manhattan has been extended into The Bronx by means of a bridge, and around these centers there has been unparalleled growth of traffic and prosperity.

The old bridges which once connected the Borough of The Bronx with Manhattan have all been taken down and replaced by up-to-date steel structures.

The first bridge across the Harlem River was built by Frederick Philipse in 1693. It was named "King's Bridge" and stood about where the present Broadway Bridge is situated until 1713, when it was moved to just east of the present structure which bears the name of Spuyten Duyvil Creek Bridge.

Originally a ferry, owned by Johannes Verveelen, plied between Westchester County and Manhattan Island. As traffic

became too heavy, it was decided to replace the ferry by a bridge over Spuyten Duyvil Creek; but the public treasury was insufficient for the undertaking of such a project. The wealthy Frederick Philipse, foreseeing the possibility of reaping a large revenue, proposed to build the bridge at his own expense if he were permitted to collect tolls. The Provincial Assembly granted to Philipse "the neck or island of land called Paparinemo with the salt meadows thereunto belonging, together with power and authority to erect a bridge over the water or river commonly called Spiten



Courtesy Department of Bridges, City of New York

KING'S BRIDGE OVER SPUYTEN DUYVIL CREEK IN 1856

Devil Ferry or Paparinemo." The "Dutch Millionaire" was authorized to impose the following tolls:

- " 3 pens (pence) for each man or horse that shall pass in the daytime.
- " 3 pens for each head of neat cattle.
- " 12 pens for each score of hogs, calves, or sheep.
- " 9 pens for every boat, vessel or canoe that shall pass the said bridge and cause the same to be drawn up.
- " 9 pens for each coach, cart, or sledg, or waggon."

The bridge was of much importance during the Revolution. Over it Washington's defeated and disheartened army retreated in

September, 1776; and over it again in November, 1783, Washington, Governor George Clinton and a guard of honor crossed, this time with their faces southward, to resume once more the possession of the City of New York. The surrounding section received the name of Kingsbridge from this bridge.

A short distance southeast of the King's Bridge stood the Farmers' Free or Dyckman's Bridge, erected in 1758 which, unlike King's Bridge, was free of all tolls. Philipse's bridge had become irksome to the farmers who were obliged to pay toll each time they



Courtesy Department of Bridges, City of New York

FARMERS' BRIDGE (DYCKMAN'S) OVER SPUYTEN DUYVIL CREEK IN 1860

crossed and recrossed it on their way to and from market. A movement was therefore started by Benjamin Palmer of City Island for raising a popular subscription with which to erect a free bridge. Palmer was encouraged in his efforts by Thomas Vermilye of Fordham and Jacob Dyckman of Manhattan, both of whom furnished the land for the approaches of the bridge. Despite the persistent opposition of Frederick Philipse, who realized that his revenue would be curtailed, the project was effected and the "Free Bridge" formally opened on New Year's Day of 1759. Thus was a blow struck at Colonial aristocracy.

The bridge was also known as "Farmers' Bridge," "Dyck-

man's Bridge," and afterwards as "Hadley's Bridge"; the latter name after George Hadley who purchased this section in 1785 from the Commissioners of Forfeiture. The bridge was destroyed during the Revolution, but rebuilt after the war. In 1911 it was replaced by a steel structure.

In 1795 the State Legislature granted a franchise to John B. Coles to build a dam bridge across the Harlem River. This is known as the first Third Avenue, or Harlem, Bridge. Hèretofore all persons going from Manhattan to the mainland, and *vice versa*,



FREE OR FARMER'S BRIDGE IN 1910

were obliged to travel in a round about way across Spuyten Duyvil Creek by ford or ferry or bridge. The bridge was to be constructed within four years, and the ownership was to be vested in Coles for sixty years, after which period it was to become the property of the State. A lock, attended by a lock-keeper, was to permit the passage of vessels.

The tolls which Coles was authorized to collect, provided he kept the bridge in repair, ranged from one cent for every ox, cow, or steer, and three cents for every pedestrian to thirty-seven and a half cents for every four-wheeled pleasure carriage and horses that passed the bridge. At the expiration of the sixty years,

the Harlem Bridge Company, which was incorporated in 1808, loathe to relinquish so rich a pudding, made efforts to procure an extension of its franchise; but the State Legislature turned it over to the counties of New York and Westchester, who converted it into a free thorofare.

For almost seventy years the Harlem Bridge did noble service across the Harlem River, when, owing to the increased traffic between Harlem and Morrisania, it was found necessary to replace it with an iron structure. This second Third Avenue, or Harlem,



Courtesy Department of Bridges, City of New York

MACOMB'S DAM BRIDGE OVER HARLEM RIVER, 1838

Bridge was in turn removed to make room for a more modern steel and iron bridge with a draw of 300 feet. The third Harlem Bridge was opened to the public on August 1st, 1898, at a cost to the City of \$2,357,742.51.

In 1800 Alexander Macomb, a wealthy merchant of New York City, who had come into possession of the forfeited Philipse property, obtained from the city authorities a water grant extending across Spuyten Duyvil Creek just east of the King's Bridge. His son Robert obtained, in 1813, a grant to erect a dam across the Harlem from Bussing's Point on the Manhattan side to Devoe's Point on the Westchester shore, thus practically forming a mill

pond out of the Harlem River and the Spuyten Duyvil Creek to supply power to the mills constructed along the Westchester side. There was a stipulation, however, that the dam should be so constructed as to allow the passage of boats, and that Macomb should always have a person in attendance to afford the desired passage. He neglected, however, to carry out this direction, and not only erected the dam without the specified contrivance, but converted its lip into a permanent bridge, known as Macomb's Dam Bridge, and collected tolls from all who crossed it. The utter obstruction



Courtesy Department of Bridges, City of New York

MACOMB'S DAM BRIDGE IN 1861

of the river thus introduced, continued until 1838. In the meantime Robert Macomb had become insolvent and his property was now in the possession of the Renwicks.

Protests were raised against the obstruction of the Harlem River as well as against the unauthorized collection of tolls, but they went unheeded. In 1838, Lewis G. Morris, a member of that family which have always championed the people's rights, devised a plot whereby he would bring the matter to an issue before the courts.

He built a dock half a mile north of Highbridge and chartered the vessel *Nonpareil* to carry a load of coal for delivery at Morris

TELEPHONE, 3869 MELROSE

LEWIS G. FRIED
863 Kelly St., Bronx, N. Y.

Parquet and Hardwood FLOORS

OF EVERY DESCRIPTION

**Old Floors Cleaned,
Scraped and Refinished**

**High Class Work and
Low Rates**

Prospect Taxi Co., Inc.

**Accessories and
Repair Work
Taxi Service**

**784-786 Southern Boulevard
BRONX, NEW YORK**

Phone, Melrose 798



PHONE 4619 MELROSE

Dresses and Skirts a Specialty

A. GREIF Ladies' Tailor

**885 Prospect Ave.
Between 161st and 162d Streets
New York**

Prospect \$1.00 Skirt Company
830 Westchester Ave.

Near Prospect Ave. Sub Station

**Skirts Made to Order \$1.00 up
Suits Made to Order \$6.00 up**

We also make SKIRTS and SUITS
from our own material.

**Specialty in Robes and
Gowns**

AUG. KORSMEIER, President
Tel., Tremont 2500

BOULEVARD AUTO CO. GARAGE

No. 2073 Southern Boulevard
Near 180th Street



Storing
Renting
Supplies

Charging
Ignition
Batteries
and
Electrics
Our
Specialty

General
Over-
hauling
Painting
Uphol-
stering
Auto
Tops
and Re-
pairing

All Work Done on Premises by Expert Mechanics

Rates Lowest Possible, Consistent with High Class Work Delivered

BRONX AGENCY FOR BUICK CARS

Limousines, Touring Cars and Taxis to Hire for all Occasions

Open Day and Night

Ideal Factory Sites



Between Rail and Water
For Sale on Liberal Terms



Port Morris Land & Imp't Co.
141 Broadway, New York

LION'S BAKERY



4380 Third Ave.,
Cor. 180th St. New York

Phone Tremont 1844

Dock. When the *Nonpareil* reached the dam at full tide, Morris demanded that the passage be opened. As this request was not complied with, Morris with the aid of about one hundred men, who appeared on a number of small boats, tore out a part of the dam and thus forced thru the passage of his vessel. A suit was instituted by the Renwicks against Morris in the Superior Court for the damage done to the dam, but a decision was rendered



MACOMB MANSION, KINGSBRIDGE

against the plaintiffs. The Supreme Court and later the Court of Errors upheld the original decision. Chancellor Walworth, in handing down his decision, said in part: "The Harlem River is an arm of the sea and a public navigable river; it was a public nuisance to obstruct the navigation thereof without authority of Law."

From that time on a drawbridge was always maintained in the dam rendering the Harlem free to navigation. It was in turn replaced in 1861, by a swinging draw which became known as the Second Macomb's Dam Bridge, and remained in service until

1895, when a Third Macomb's Dam, or Central Bridge, a steel structure, took its place.

The oldest bridge across the Harlem today is the famous High Bridge, which was completed in 1849. It is 1,450 feet long and 25 feet wide, and extends between West One Hundred Seventy-fifth Street and Tenth Avenue, Manhattan, and Aqueduct Avenue near One Hundred Seventieth Street, The Bronx. It is an excellent example of masonry arch construction, and is one of the sights of the neighborhood.

High Bridge, as the name suggests, was so constructed as not



Courtesy Department of Bridges, City of New York

WILLIS AVENUE BRIDGE

to interfere with the navigation of the Harlem River. This was the effect of the decision rendered by the courts of the State of New York in connection with the Macomb's Dam Bridge. It had been planned to conduct the water of the Croton River by means of a low siphon bridge across the Harlem River to supply water to the City of New York. But the decision of 1839 caused the Legislature to pass an act directing the water commissioners to construct the aqueduct over the Harlem River with arches and piers; the arches to have a span of at least eighty feet and not less than one hundred feet from the usual high-water mark of the river to the underside of the arches of the crown.

Between the King's and the Farmers' or Dyckman's Bridges stands the Broadway Bridge, a perfect example of its type. It was opened to the public October 14, 1900.

Facing the Broadway Bridge is the Macomb Mansion. In 1693 this was known as the "public house at the north end of the bridge," and in 1776 as Cox's Tavern. It was bought by Alexander Macomb in 1797, who built nearby in 1800 the First Macomb's Dam, and in 1848 was sold to the late J. H. Godwin. Parts still show its age.

The Washington Bridge, with its two great steel arch spans of 510 feet each comes next and is one of the most beautiful specimens of ornamental bridgework in the world. It connects West One Hundred Eighty-first Street, Manhattan, with Aqueduct Avenue near East One Hundred Seventy-first Street, The Bronx. The bridge was opened to the public in 1888, after two years in building and at a cost of nearly three millions of dollars. Its entire length is 2,399 feet, and it is 86 feet wide. The crowns of the arches are 133½ feet above the mean high-water mark.

Beginning at the East River and extending towards the Hudson is the magnificent Willis Avenue steel drawbridge which supports a heavy traffic. It connects East One Hundred Twenty-fifth Street and First Avenue, Manhattan, with East One Hundred Thirty-fourth Street and Willis Avenue, Bronx. It cost two million dollars, and was opened to the public August 22nd, 1901.

Next comes the Third Avenue Bridge carrying the Elevated Railroad. This is owned by the Suburban Rapid Transit Company, but there is a free public footway. The Fourth Avenue Bridge is said to be the heaviest steel drawbridge in the world, and is used exclusively for railroad crossing.

The splendid Madison Avenue Bridge comes next, connecting Madison Avenue, Manhattan, with East One Hundred Thirty-eighth Street, The Bronx. This was the first bridge to be well elevated above the river so that it would not be necessary to open the draw for every passing vessel. The draws are not opened before 9 o'clock in the morning nor later than 5 o'clock in the afternoon, so as to avoid blocking the traffic and delaying the passengers. The first Madison Avenue Bridge, constructed in 1884, was replaced by a larger and more substantial structure, which was opened to the public on July 18th, 1910.

The One Hundred Forty-fifth Street Bridge connects West

One Hundred Forty-fifth Street and Lenox Avenue, Manhattan, with East One Hundred Forty-ninth Street, The Bronx. It was opened to the public on August 24th, 1905. Then follow the Macomb's Dam; New York and Putnam; Washington; University Heights; Ship Canal; Broadway and King's Bridges.

Connecting the Borough of The Bronx with the Borough of Queens is to be the new steel Bronx-Astoria Bridge, now in the process of construction. This bridge, which will be the largest of its kind in the world, will consist of a series of spans from Port Morris over Randall's and Ward's Islands, to the shore of the Borough of Queens, and will provide for direct railroad communication between the two boroughs. It was designed by former Bridge Commissioner, Gustav Lindenthal and Palmer and Hornbostel.

The viaduct in The Bronx will be twelve blocks long, from One Hundred Forty-second Street and Walnut Avenue, where it will be twenty feet above ground, thru the Port Morris yard of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad, to the water front; here its height will be sixty-five feet.

The first span, a 300-foot bridge of the lift type, will cross Bronx Kills. There will be a steel pier in the center, so constructed as to permit, in the event of the Kills being deepened, as was proposed by the War Department, the passage of vessels from the Hudson River to the Sound by way of the Harlem Ship Canal.

Next will come a 2,600-foot viaduct across Randall's Island, connecting with the second bridge, a 1,000 foot riveted truss bridge composed of five spans across Little Hell Gate. This joins the viaduct across Ward's Island, which will rest on concrete piers and will be 2,600 feet long. This viaduct will join the main bridge structure across Hell Gate, connecting with the Astoria shore between Ditmars and Potter Avenues, just south of the old Barclay Mansion.

The railroad crossing this bridge will have a line for freight and another for passengers. The passenger line will connect the Pennsylvania Railroad and the New Haven by means of the Pennsylvania tunnel under the Hudson River and the tunnel under the City at Thirty-fourth Street, thus making a route thru The Bronx from the southwest to New England and Canada. The freight line will come by the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad along the north shore of Staten Island to St. George, thence by tunnel

under the narrows to South Brooklyn, and thence by the Bronx-Astoria Bridge to the Bronx.

The finest bridge of all, however, will be the Henry Hudson Memorial Bridge which is to be erected over the ship canal connecting Manhattan and The Bronx. This bridge will have a span of 703 feet and will rank as one of the grandest achievements in bridge engineering, as no masonry arch has yet been built with a span of even 300 feet.

With the possible exception of the Albany Post Road, which extends along the eastern bank of the historic Hudson; the old King's Bridge Road leading thru Fordham; and the Boston Post Road, which branches east at King's Bridge, nearly all of the early highways have disappeared entirely or have been so altered that they are unrecognizable. The old Westchester Path, which was the first roadway cut out in Westchester County by the early pioneers, is but a memory today; and all traces of its former existence have been obliterated. In the early Colonial days it was the only road leading from Manhattan Island to Westchester County. By going along its crooked route, denoted by marked trees thru the dense wilderness, it was possible, if one cared to follow the Indian trails, to reach Greenwich and the Berkshire Hills.

Many of the families followed the line of the old Westchester Path as is shown by the early deeds which speak of the old Westchester Path as bounding their property on one side or the other.

It was also over this path that the Colonial Legislature made its flight to White Plains in 1776, from the scenes of its deliberation in New York City, and this was the road chosen by Harvey Birch, Fenimore Cooper's Spy, in his secret journeys for the Commander-in-Chief of the Continental army.

CHAPTER VII

THE PARKS

The Parks Show Nature in Her Happiest Mood—Broad Acres Yield to Sport and Sentiment—Scenes Hallowed by Sacrifices and Struggles of Our Ancestors—A Page of Old History—The Bronx Beautiful Society.



HAT has already greatly added to the attractiveness of The Bronx is its splendid chain of parks and recreation places. All the boroughs have beautiful parks, but in none has Nature been more lavish in her handiwork than in those located in The Bronx.

In April, 1883, the Legislature of New York, in the face of much opposition, passed an act authorizing an appointment of a commission to select one or more parks beyond the Harlem River. This commission was duly appointed, and they marked out the sites of the three large parks—Pelham, Bronx and Van Cortlandt—and of three little ones—Crotona, Claremont and St. Mary's. The commission consisted of Luther R. Marsh, President; Waldo Hutchins, Louis Fitzgerald, Charles L. Tiffany, George W. McLean, Thomas J. Crombie, William W. Niles, and John Mullan, Secretary, nearly all of whom had been from the beginning conspicuously active in the movement.

The chief objection raised against the purchase of park land was that the parks would be a heavy expense to the city, and that the money was needed for other purposes. But this was met by the argument that the acquisition by the city of the parks would raise the value of real estate in their neighborhood, and that the city would profit by the increased taxable value of the property. This was shown to be the case in regard to Central Park. The experience of other cities, particularly Chicago and Boston, was cited to substantiate this statement.

In June, 1884, the legislature passed an act giving possession of the six parks to the City of New York, and directing the Supreme Court to appoint a commission to appraise the lands. This was done, and the land became the property of the City at a cost of \$9,000,000.

There are seventeen named parks in the Borough, with a total of 3,916 acres, besides numerous unnamed grounds open to the public. The Bronx has 1,148 more acreage of park lands, including the parkways, than all the other boroughs combined. They are so evenly distributed thruout the Borough that they are within the reach of all and afford ample pleasure grounds for the multitudes.

The parks and parkways of The Bronx extend from one end of the Borough to the other. Beginning with the most westerly park limit there is the Spuyten Duyvil Parkway, beginning at the junction of Spuyten Duyvil Creek and the Hudson River, and winding over the hills and thru the valleys until it intersects Van Cortlandt Park at Two Hundred Seventy-second Street. This parkway is intended to be a connecting link, in time, between the system of parkways in The Bronx and those in Manhattan by means of a viaduct over the Spuyten Duyvil Creek, to connect with a similar parkway leading along the western side of Manhattan, which will be an extension of Riverside Drive and Boulevard Lafayette.

Going easterly thru Van Cortlandt Park, we enter the Mosholu Parkway, which leads directly to Bronx Park. Crossing Bronx Park, and still going easterly we enter The Bronx and Pelham Parkway, which brings us over to the great Pelham Bay Park, and following along the roadway thru Pelham Bay Park leads us up to the northerly limits of the City, and out into the town of Pelham Manor and New Rochelle.

The largest of these parks are: Pelham Bay, Van Cortlandt, and Bronx Parks. These three alone cover 3,608 acres. Other parks in the Borough include Claremont, Crotona, De Voe, Joseph Rodman Drake, Echo, Sigel, Macomb's Dam, Poe, St. James, St. Mary's, University and Washington Bridge.

Pelham Bay, the largest of the parks, is twice the size of Central Park, and contains large tracts of woodland with nine miles of water front. It has a fine athletic field and parade ground, an 18-hole golf course, and also two excellent bathing beaches. Here we have located a tent city, named Orchard Beach, where families and clubs erect their tents and spend the summer in the open air under the supervision of the Park Department.

It was in this park that Thomas Pell signed an important treaty with two Siwanoy Indian sachems in 1654, which made him lord of all that region. An iron fence that once surrounded

RYE BEACH

AMUSEMENT

RYE, N.Y. PARK

on Long Island Sound

ACCESSIBLE FROM ALL POINTS BETWEEN
NEW YORK CITY AND BRIDGEPORT
OPENS DECORATION DAY CLOSSES SEPTEMBER 15th.



FINEST AND SAFEST BATHING BEACH ON LONG ISLAND SOUND

New Concrete Bathing Pavilion with over 300 Rooms.

A SCORE OF THE SAFEST AND MOST MODERN AMUSEMENT DEVICES.

Westchester's Paradise for Children and Grown Ups

Ideal for Sunday School Picnics and Outings. Basket Parties Welcome. Accommodations for 1,000 in Grove. 60-foot Ferris Wheel—Commanding a Magnificent view of surrounding country. "Dip the Loop" Half Mile Coaster—Speedy, Safe and Strong. Mammoth Circle Swing—Blood Tingly and Exhilarating. Frolic and Old Mill—Will drive away the blues—Both Uproariously Funny. MANY OTHER FEATURES. Large Open Air Theatre—Two high class performances daily. Immense Dancing Pavilion and Good Music Tuesday and Thursday evenings. Most Luxurious Bathing Pavilion in United States.

BRING THE KIDDIES TO RYE BEACH PARK

LET THEM ENJOY THE DELIGHTFUL AIR,
THE SAFEST BATHING ON THE SOUND
and Dig in the Sand or Fly on the Swings, etc.



They will have the care of our personal attendants on the CAROUSEL

Plenty of room for them to roam, or they may
find an abundance of Free Games to amuse them

The Pony Track, around which speed gentle and well broken ponies, will
prove a source of great delight to them.

The Candy, Ice Cream and Lemonade are made on the grounds from pure ingredients

the famous tree under which it was signed, is all that remains to remind us of "Treaty Oak," which was destroyed in 1906 by a bolt of lightning. Here, too, on October 18, 1776, Col. Glover with a brigade of 550 Marblehead fishermen engaged Sir William Howe's army and held it in check long enough to enable General Washington's forces to make a successful retreat to White Plains.



PELL TREATY OAK, PELHAM BAY PARK

This feat is memorialized by a tablet on the face of a great glacial boulder on the City Island road, known as "Glover's Rock."

Extending thru this park, also, is "Split Rock" Road. This derives its name from a large boulder which seems to have been cleft in twain by a tree growing up thru the middle of the rock. Near this boulder is the site of the house of the unfortunate Anne Hutchinson who was cruelly butchered by the Indians.

Over the Hutchinson River, which perpetuates the memory of the fateful religious reformer in this region, is the Pelham Bridge, constructed in 1908. This bridge replaced an older one built in 1870, which was itself a successor to one erected in 1834. The Pelham Bridge has been famous for the large fish that have been caught from it, ranging in weight from twenty to sixty-three pounds.

The famous old chestnut tree, under whose spreading branches Lord Howe and his officers had their luncheon just before the battle of White Plains, is still standing in a wooded dell north of Eastchester.

The region at one time abounded in wild animals. Within two centuries, wolves were a great pest in this neighborhood. The Provincial Assembly enacted that in the County of Westchester twenty shillings (about \$5) should be paid for a grown wolf killed by a Christian, and ten shillings (\$2.50) for one killed by an Indian, and half that sum respectively for a whelp. The remains of wolf-pits were, up to recently, to be seen not far from Pelham Park. Besides the deer, the wild turkey existed in great numbers on the verge of the forest. It is said that flocks of them used to fly from the ridge west of Van Cortlandt Park across Tippet's Brook to a hill east of this little stream. The flight was always begun by a large black cock, and was made at sunset. The leader gave the note and the flock were at once on the wing.

Beavers were very common on the Bronx River. The last of them were seen there about 1790. It is said they at one time changed the course of the river by a dam. If the current was feeble, they saved themselves trouble by building the dam straight across; but, if it was strong, they built the dam in a convex shape, so as to resist the strength of the water. It was, therefore, possible to tell the force of a stream by the shape of the beaver dams.

Van Cortlandt Park, a botanical reservation, is situated in Northwest Bronx and is the second largest in the Borough. On account of its accessibility it is much further advanced in its development and is more generally used than Pelham Bay Park. Its smooth 150-acre parade ground, hemmed in on three sides by rugged hills and picturesque landscapes, makes a very impressive scene. On this green sward the National Guardsmen in summer fight their sham battles and hold their dress parades. The field

is also used for athletic sports of all kinds, particularly baseball, golf and polo.

The parade ground is the site of Adrien Van der Donck's Planting Field (1653), where he located his *bouwerie*. Van der Donck had been sheriff of Rensselaerswyck, but his young, newly-wedded wife persuaded him to remove to Manhattan. Before he had completed his arrangements for removal, his pretty cottage burned down; and, as it was in the depth of an inclement winter (1647), Van Corlear invited his houseless neighbors to share his hospitality. A quarrel soon arose because the host insisted that



VAN CORTLANDT VAULT, VAN CORTLANDT PARK

Van der Donck was bound to make good to his patroon the value of the lost house. Van der Donck retorted sharply, and was ordered from the house. Kieft, who was indebted to him for a large amount of borrowed money, permitted him to purchase from the Indians a large tract of land, now part of Van Cortlandt Park, and granted him the privileges of patroon. This took the name of *Colen Donck*, on Donck's Colony. Many of the Dutch were in the habit of calling this estate *de Jonkheer's Landt*, Jonkheer being a title which in Holland was applied to the sons of noblemen. The English corrupted it and called it "Yonkers," whence the name of the town north of Van Cortlandt Park.

Van Cortlandt Lake comprises about seventy-five acres and during winter offers opportunity to ten or fifteen thousand skaters,

and in summer is dotted by those who love to go out in small boats. It was made in 1700 by throwing an embankment across Tippet's Brook, the Mosholu of the Indians.

No spot of ground around New York is so hallowed by Revolutionary memories as this. It was on Vault Hill, to the northwest of the Van Cortlandt mansion, that Washington in 1781 kept a string of camp fires blazing for several days to deceive Clinton across Spuyten Duyvil Creek, while the allied French and American armies were speeding across the Jerseys on their way to Philadel-



VAN CORTLANDT MANSION, VAN CORTLANDT PARK

phia and Yorktown. Vault Hill derived its name from the ancient burial place of the Van Cortlandts. It was in this vault that the records of the City of New York were hidden by Augustus Van Cortlandt, then City Clerk, when the City was evacuated by the Americans in 1776, and preserved until peace was restored.

In the lower part of Van Cortlandt Park, in front of the Parade Ground, still stands the historic mansion erected in 1748 by Frederick Van Cortlandt, who married Frances Jay, daughter of the ancestor of Chief Justice John Jay. Frederick Van Cortlandt refers to it in his will, written in 1749 as "the large stone dwelling house which I am about finishing."

Two eagles surmounted the posts of an old gateway which, according to Bolton's "History of Westchester," were spoils taken from a Spanish privateer, and presented to the house by a British Admiral. The Eagles have disappeared since the sale to the City. General Washington occupied this house for a brief time in 1781, prior to his retreat to Yorktown, and at the close of the war in 1783 spent a night there before crossing King's Bridge on his triumphal entry into the City of New York. The house is still in



VAN CORTLANDT MILLS

an excellent state of preservation, and is used as a repository of Colonial and Revolutionary relics, in the care of the Colonial Dames. It is furnished, as in the old historic days, with high canopied bedsteads and other quaint household articles. In the kitchen may still be seen the old fashioned utensils and the large fireplace. It was in the capacious rooms of this grand, old residence that Washington, Rochambeau, the Duke of Clarence (later King William the Fourth), and other celebrities were entertained. During the Revolution this structure was the headquarters for the Hessian Jaegers. Captain Rowe of the Princhbank Jaegers, having been mortally wounded by the American water guard stationed on

Wild Boar Hill, was conveyed into one of the rooms of the Van Cortlandt mansion, where, after faintly speaking a few words to his broken-hearted bride-elect, became exhausted by the effort, and expired in her arms.

Grand old trees surround the ancient mansion and spread their mighty boughs above the eaves of that stately old building, as if to shield it from the blustering winds that on stormy days sweep over the ridge. South of the mansion, surrounded by a moat, is



FIFTEENTH MILESTONE



TENTH MILESTONE

the Dutch garden. One of the stones of the old mill forms the base for the pedestal of a sun dial. Under the shadow of this building may be seen the grim Rhinelander Sugar-House Prison window, removed hither from Duane and Rose Streets, Manhattan. This Rhinelander Sugar House was used during the Revolutionary War as a British military prison, and it was against the solid iron grated bars of this window that the patriots pressed their faces to get a breath of pure air. The window was presented by T. J. O. Rhinelander, and dedicated on May 26, 1903. It is flanked by two cannons from Fort Independence.

A crumbling old millstone on the bank of the mill race, near the site of the original Van Cortlandt house, is the only remaining

relic of the picturesque saw and grist mills erected by Jacobus Van Cortlandt, in 1700, which stood on the west side of the bridge crossing the dam; they were struck by lightning and destroyed in 1901. To the westward, on Newton Avenue, part of the old Albany Post Road, near Two Hundred Twenty-second Street, may still be seen one of the two surviving milestones in this Borough, recently reset by the City History Club. It was the fifteenth on the route to Albany; the other one (the tenth milestone) is located at One Hundred Sixty-eighth Street and Boston Road.



HADLEY HOUSE

About four hundred paces north is the Van Cortlandt's miller's house, a white house built for the miller of the old estate.

Further along on the left is the Hadley house, partly of wood, unpainted, and partly of stone covered with vines. It probably antedates the Van Cortlandt mansion. It is said to have given shelter more than once to Washington. In the adjoining woods many relics have been found, including old English muskets, and an Indian skeleton in a sitting position, holding a small child's skeleton in its arms. Just above, north of Riverside Lane, is the

ARE YOU HIP? GO TO KIPP'S



Situated in most picturesque part of Bronx, directly opposite Fordham entrance of Bronx Park Large, shady veranda, where you can be entertained by a constant stream of automobiles from four different directions

Easily accessible from any point in the city. All cars stop at or transfer to the door.

+++

Musical Entertainment

Afternoons & Evenings

+++

Refreshments of Every Description

+++

Meals a la Carte

At Popular Prices

Large up-to-date Sheds for the accommodation of Horses and Automobiles

KIPP'S PARKWAY HOTEL,

Under the management of Frank W. Kipp for the past thirteen years

Cor. Fordham Road & Southern Boulevard, Bronx, N. Y. C.

Zoo Tavern

Directly Opposite Bronx Zoo. Entrance at 182d St. & So. Boul. HENRY JAEGER, Prop. Tel. 470 Tremon



Summer and
Winter
Garden

Hall for
Weddings and
Private Parties
Banquets and
Lodge Meetings.

Automobile Parties a Specialty Excellent Service Popular Prices

Vocal and Instrumental Music every Sunday

Have you ever had the
pleasure of dining at

Sormani's Cafe, Hotel and Restaurant

East Side of White Plains Road, South of Pelham Parkway. Near Bronx Park, N. Y. C.



Table d'hote
from 12
till 8:30 P. M.
A la Carte
till 11 P. M.

Italian Table
d'hote Dinner and a la
Carte

Real Italian
Spaghetti in
Real Italian
Style our
Specialty

A visit to
SORMANI'S
will leave
pleasant recol-
lections

Telephone
168 Williamsbridge

TEL. TREMONT 843

WM. M. TIVOLI

MOHEGAN TAVERN HIGH CLASS CABARET

E. 178th Street SOUTHERN BOULEVARD
179th CROTONA PARKWAY
AND MOHEGAN AVENUE

ONE BLOCK TO 177th and 180th ST. CROSSTOWN CARS

Bronx, N. Y.

Large Hall Free for Smokers, Entertainments, and Receptions for Clubs

Every Evening at 8 o'clock

Somler house, the older portion dating back to the Revolution.

Near Hawthorne Avenue, west of Valentine Lane, is the remains of Washington's chestnut, a gigantic tree over two centuries old, which, tradition says, Washington used as a place of observation.

At the corner of Hawthorne Avenue is the Lawrence house, where Washington stopped. This house was probably given to Lawrence as a reward for his services as guide.

At Sycamore Avenue and Two Hundred and Fifty-third Street, one block south of the Morrisania mansion, stands the former home of Mark Twain, where he lived in 1901.

Another interesting scene worth visiting in Van Cortlandt Park is the Indian Field at Two Hundred Thirty-seventh Street and Mount Vernon Avenue. On this plot lie the remains of Chief Nimham and seventeen Stockbridge Indians, who died on August 31, 1778, fighting on the side of the patriots. The Indians put up a desperate resistance against the British Legion Dragoons, but were overmatched by superior numbers. Chief Nimham wounded Simcoe, one of the British commanders but was himself killed by Wright, his orderly Hussar. A cairn, upon which has been fastened a bronze memorial tablet by the Bronx Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, is a tribute worthy of that valorous band who gave their lives for liberty. It bears the following inscription:

AUGUST 31, 1778.
UPON THIS FIELD,
CHIEF NIMHAM,
AND SEVENTEEN STOCKBRIDGE INDIANS,
AS ALLIES OF THE PATRIOTS,
GAVE THEIR LIVES FOR LIBERTY.

ERECTED BY BRONX CHAPTER,
DAUGHTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION,
MOUNT VERNON, NEW YORK.
JUNE 14, 1906.

The Mosholu Parkway over 6,500 feet long and 600 feet wide leads direct from the Van Cortlandt to the Bronx Park. The grandeur and natural beauty of the Bronx Park is unsurpassed. The Zoological Park and the Botanical Gardens are the most complete, and are said to be the finest in the world.

The Zoological Park is free to the public every day, except Mondays and Thursdays (if not holidays) when the admission fee is 25 cents. Almost every specimen of wild animal is to be found here amid surroundings as nearly like those of their native haunts as it is possible to create.

The Botanical Gardens are alone worth a visit to the park,



INDIAN MONUMENT, VAN CORTLANDT PARK

and are a wonderland of trees, flowers, and shrubberies. The celebrated Hemlock Grove on the west bank of the Bronx River is a favorite resort of artists who find many an inspiring scene for brush or pencil.

Other interesting points are: The Crystal Palace, the 100-ton Rocking Stone, and the Boars' Den, a natural cave in the rocks.

Bronx Park was at one time the property of the Lorillards,

whose mansion still stands near the waterfall that ran the old snuff mill from which the family derived its fortune. During the Revolution it was the one place in the Colonies where snuff was manufactured. The manor-house has been renovated and turned into a museum by the Bronx Society of Arts and Sciences. The Lorillard Mansion Museum is open free to the public from 2 to 5 p. m. It would thrill the heart of an antiquarian to see the varied exhibits, historical relics, and countless other curiosities.



ELEPHANT HOUSE, BRONX PARK

Thru a rocky chasm flows the romantic Bronx River, made famous by Lord North. His Lordship once remarked that Howe should have sailed his fleet up the Bronx River, and thus cut off Washington's retreat. Had Howe followed up this ludicrous order the British fleet would, no doubt, have remained there to this day. The Bronx River runs directly thru part of the park from north to south, varying in width from 50 to 400 feet.

Crotona Park is situated in what is now one of the most populous sections of the Borough, and with its ball fields, tennis courts, athletic fields, and Indian Lake, affords splendid recreation grounds for those living in its immediate neighborhood. Many improvements have been made in this park within the last few years. In

the northwest corner of the park stands the Borough Hall, erected in 1897.

The land comprising Crotona Park constituted the Bathgate Farm. Alexander Bathgate, a Scotchman, who came to this country early in the nineteenth century, was overseer on the farm of Gouverneur Morris, the First. He was frugal and thrifty, and he saved enough to purchase the farm from the second Gouverneur Morris.



"GUNDA," THE FAMOUS ELEPHANT OF BRONX PARK ZOO

Crotona Parkway, 100 feet wide, connects Crotona Park with Bronx Park. It was opened in 1910.

Claremont Park is situated on very high natural ground and gives an extensive view of the surrounding territory on all sides. This was formerly known as the Zborowski Farm, which Martin Zborowski obtained as a dowry from the Morris family thru his marriage to Anna Morris. The headquarters of the Bronx Park Department is located in what was known as the Zborowski mansion, a stone building erected in 1859, and is evidently on the site of an older building dating about 1676. Beyond is the famous *Black Swamp*, where cattle have been lost since the time of the Indians. For years it has defied the efforts of all contractors to fill it up.

Claremont Park is connected with Crotona Park by means of Wendover Avenue. A little north of Claremont Park are located the smaller parks, known as Echo Park, St. James Park and Poe Park. Poe Park is so named because adjacent to the park was the Poe Cottage, recently removed to the Park and where Edgar Allen Poe wrote many of his poems. Here, Virginia, his invalid wife, died and was buried from the Fordham Manor Dutch Reformed Church, Kingsbridge Road and Aqueduct Avenue. In Poe Park, directly opposite the cottage, there is a bust of Poe with an inscrip-



BIRD COURT, BRONX PARK

tion, erected by the Bronx Society of Arts and Sciences on the centenary of his birth, January 19th, 1909. In the Cromwell house near the Poe cottage lived an old lady who supplied Poe with the necessities of life during his deepest poverty.

St. Mary's Park is situated at the southerly end of the Borough and was formerly a portion of the property of Gouverneur Morris, who lies buried in the churchyard of St. Ann's Church, within a few feet of the park.

In the northwesterly end of the Borough are Franz Sigel Park, Macomb's Dam Park, University Park and Washington Bridge Park; all small but splendidly located, and adding much to the general beauty of the Borough. Franz Sigel Park, originally

called Cedar Park from the number of cedar trees growing there, was so renamed, in 1902, in memory of the heroic Civil War veteran who lived during the latter part of his life not far from Cedar Park.

Recently some of the members of the North Side Board of Trade and The Bronx Industrial Bureau called, thru W. R. Messenger, the Secretary of the Bureau, a meeting of citizens in



LORILLARD MANSION, BRONX PARK

the Morris High School to consider the organization of a society which should have for its object the preservation of the natural beauties of the Borough and the improvement of its home surroundings. A large and interested body of citizens responded to the call, and the meeting resulted in the organization of the Bronx-Beautiful Society.

Among those urging its formation and indicating its field of usefulness were the Hon. C. C. Miller, President of the Borough; Hon. Joseph A. Goulden, ex-member of Congress; Hon. Thomas

J. Higgins, Commissioner of Parks; Chancellor Elmer E. Brown, of New York University; R. E. Simon, President of the Bronx Industrial Bureau; E. B. Boynton, President of the American Realty Company; Hon. James L. Wells, who was elected President of the Society; Chancellor Brown became its Vice President; Hon. Joseph A. Goulden was made Chairman of the Executive Committee, and Charles F. Minor, manager of The Bronx branch



BATHGATE HOMESTEAD

of the Knickerbocker Trust Company, became Treasurer, while W. R. Messenger was elected secretary. Other members of the Executive Committee were J. J. Amory, E. B. Boynton, Prof. Irvin Chaffee, William S. Germain, Rev. Thomas F. Gregg, Rev. W. H. Kephart, Hon. F. D. Wilsey, R. E. Simon, W. R. Messenger, and Olin J. Stephens. To this committee have since been added Charles Hilton Brown and Mrs. Miller, of Mount Hope.

CHAPTER VIII

EDUCATIONAL INSTITUTIONS

How the Future of the Child is Anticipated and the Schools Turn out the Men and Women of Tomorrow—Churches—How the Spiritual and Moral Welfare is looked After—Hospitals—Benevolent and Charitable Institutions—Cemeteries.



IN educational facilities The Bronx possesses all that can be desired. No civic institutions have been more zealously looked after by the municipality than the public schools. True, some of the lower grades have been necessarily put on part time because of the enormous increase in population in the last two years; but many new schools are now in course of erection and the work is being pushed with all vigor so that in due time there will be a seat for every child in The Bronx.

Search among the old records has failed to reveal just where and when the first school in the Borough was established. It was in a quaint little story-and-a-half schoolhouse once standing just east of the old Boston Post Road, now Third Avenue, and One Hundred Fifty-sixth Street that the gentry of the neighborhood, including the various branches of the Morris family, learned the rudiments of reading, writing, and ciphering. Bolton in his "History of the County of Westchester" says that the first schoolhouse in Eastchester was erected in 1683, but it hardly seems possible that the burghers' children with their thirst for knowledge were so long without a school.

In Westchester the English school was established and maintained by the British Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. The first schoolmaster of whom we have any record is Edward Fitzgerald who served in 1709. He seems to have taught in the school only provisionally, for in that year the Rev. John Bartow wrote to the Society recommending the appointment of Daniel Clark, the son of a clergyman, as schoolmaster. Mr. Clark served from 1710 to 1713, when he was succeeded by Charles Glover, who held the position until 1719. Mr. Glover was paid a

salary of eighteen pounds per annum, which was considered quite an income in those days.

Mr. William Forster, who subsequently opposed Judge Lewis Morris in the election for representative in the Assembly, is next mentioned as the schoolmaster at Westchester. His remuneration was ten pounds per annum and a gratuity of ten pounds. He served until 1743, and the following year was succeeded by Mr. Basil Bartow, the son of the Rev. John Bartow, who held the position until 1762. There was a vacancy for two years which was filled by Mr. Nathaniel Seabury, a son of the Society's missionary at Hempstead, Long Island, and a brother of the Rev. Samuel Seabury, rector of the parish. The power of appointment had been vested by the Propagation Society in the rector; George Youngs succeeded Nathaniel Seabury in 1768, and served until 1772. There was a vacancy again for two years, and in 1774 Mr. Gott accepted the appointment and held the office until the Revolution. After the war the school passed from the authority of the church to that of the town.

It was not, however, until 1874, when the Twenty-third and the Twenty-fourth Wards were annexed to New York City and the schools passed under the control of the Board of Education, that they developed to any degree of efficiency.

Since the consolidation of the Greater City in 1897, the public school system in the Borough has reached its highest mark. From a small number of scattered schools with a few thousand pupils there has grown a school population of 86,000, housed in fifty elementary school buildings and one secondary school. There is a class for crippled children in Public School No. 4 at Prospect Avenue and One Hundred and Seventy-sixth Street. They are transported to and from the school by means of two stages. Open-air classes are provided for enemic children, who are supplied with free lunches and sitting-out paraphernalia.

Besides these schools there are within the Borough limits twenty parochial schools and the two great universities—New York and Fordham.

The New York University, founded in 1831, ranks among the foremost institutions of learning in the United States. The founders had an idea of grandeur and beauty when they selected this spot for the celebrated college. It is charmingly situated on a forty-acre elevation on Fordham Heights and overlooks the Harlem

and Hudson Rivers, as well as Long Island Sound. Its environments are ideal and invigorating for the educational advantages and physical opportunities provided under the experienced and able supervision of Dr. Elmer Ellsworth Brown, Chancellor, and a most distinguished faculty.

About five thousand students are distributed thru the fol-



NEW YORK UNIVERSITY

lowing departments: College of Arts and Pure Science, Graduate School, School of Pedagogy, School of Commerce, Law School, and Medical College.

Adjoining the Library Building is the "Hall of Fame," where are recorded on bronze tablets the names of America's immortals in science, literature, art, law, politics and other fields of noble endeavor. These names are selected by a committee of men who are themselves leaders in their respective professions, and who are thus best qualified to pass judgment upon such matters.

The site of Fort Number Eight was acquired by the University in 1907. It is marked by a boulder inscribed:

THE SITE
OF
FORT NUMBER EIGHT
1776-1783.

Fordham University, established ten years later, has a widespread fame, and its students come from every quarter of the globe. The college is located in Fordham at the northern part of The Bronx. Since its inception, in 1841, it has been under the auspices of the Fathers of the Society of Jesus. No college throughout the land is more thorough in its system of education than this, and no student gets his university degree until he has attained the high intellectual qualifications for which the university is noted.

The university includes three departments: The Department of Philosophy and Arts, the Department of Medicine and the Department of Law. A school of Pharmacy was added last year, and Schools of Dentistry and Engineering will be established in 1914.

At the corner of Fordham Road and Sedgwick Avenue, on the site of the Old Dutch Burial Ground, stands the imposing Webb's Academy and Home for Shipbuilders. It was founded and endowed by the eminent shipbuilder and naval architect, William Henry Webb, who is noted for his ship, the *Dunderberg*, built in 1864 for the United States Government and afterwards sold it to France. The Academy gives young men, who are citizens of the United States and who pass the entrance examination, free instruction in the science and the art of shipbuilding and marine engine building. It furnishes its students with board and lodging as well as with all of the necessary tools and materials. The Home affords free relief and support to aged, indigent, or unfortunate shipbuilders or marine engine builders, as well as to their wives or widows.

Other institutions of importance are: The Morris High School on Boston Road, Classon's Point Military Academy, and the Convent Schools and Academies of Mount St. Vincent, St. Joseph, St. Jerome, St. Martin of Tours, and Mount St. Ursula.

The spiritual and moral welfare of the community is looked after by one hundred and seventy-seven churches, made up of the following denominations: Baptist, 13; Congregational, 6; Disciples

of Christ, 2; Jewish, 12; Lutheran, 23; Methodist, 26; Moravian, 1; Presbyterian, 17; Protestant Episcopal, 25; Reformed Church of America, 9; Reformed Episcopal, 1; Seventh Day Adventists, 3; Roman Catholic, 38, and United Presbyterian, 1.

Accessory to these are many charitable and benevolent institutions, as well as hospitals and free dispensaries. In these the wants of the needy are looked after and the sick are admitted free,



MORRIS HIGH SCHOOL

if too poor to pay for treatment. On the staffs of these hospitals are many distinguished physicians and surgeons who receive large fees in private practice, but who, as humanitarians, give their time and service to the poor without remuneration.

There are ten hospitals in The Bronx, three of which have ambulance service answering all calls in the Borough. Fordham Hospital, established in 1882, is under the charge of the Board of Trustees of Bellevue and Allied Hospitals. It is not only the busiest hospital, but it covers more territory than any of the other

institutions; its ambulance district reaches from East One Hundred Seventieth Street to City Island. The hospital is admirably situated at Southern Boulevard and Crotona Avenue and faces the Bronx Zoological Park. An excellent corps of physicians and surgeons treat an average of one hundred and sixty patients a day. There are one hundred and fifty beds distributed in six wards, and in all there are accommodations for five hundred patients.

Reposing upon the rocky heights at Cauldwell and Westchester Avenues is Lebanon Hospital, formerly the Ursuline Convent. Altho incorporated in 1890 by Jewish philanthropists its doors are open to all, regardless of nationality or creed. Connected with the hospital is a free dispensary and a splendid training school for nurses.

For the eight months preceding December 31st, 1912, 2,593 patients were treated in the hospital. In addition the ambulance service responded to 1,639 calls, of which 1,436 were accident cases that were taken to the hospital for treatment. During the same period 27,309 patients were treated in the dispensary free of charge.

The hospital is maintained partly by voluntary subscription and donations, and partly by the city. Its ambulance territory is from One Hundred Forty-ninth to One Hundred Seventieth Streets.

Lincoln Hospital, at East One Hundred Forty-first Street and Concord Avenue, was originally incorporated in 1845, as a colored home and hospital. In 1901 it was opened to the general public and an ambulance service was added, covering the territory from Harlem River to One Hundred Forty-ninth Street. It provides separate buildings for consumptive and maternity patients, and a detached pavilion for persons afflicted with infectious diseases. It has also a home for the aged, infirm and destitute colored people of both sexes; a home for incurables; and a training school for colored nurses. The hospital has a capacity of four hundred beds. It is supported by voluntary subscriptions, donations and bequests.

St. Joseph's Hospital for consumptives, a Roman Catholic institution, is located at St. Ann's and Brook Avenues, East One Hundred Forty-third and One Hundred Forty-fourth Streets. It was established in 1882, and is in charge of the Sisters of the Poor of Saint Francis, a German order. During 1912, over 2,000 patients were treated here irrespective of nationality or religious denomination. The hospital has five hundred beds which

are constantly occupied by sufferers in all stages of the "Great White Plague."

Seton Hospital at Spuyten Duyvil is another fine institution where tuberculous patients are treated irrespective of race or creed. Its location is ideal. Overlooking the Hudson and Harlem Rivers, it embraces an area of twenty-eight acres. The hospital was named after Mother Elizabeth Baily Seton, the founder of the Sisters of Charity in the United States. It was incorporated in 1892 and opened in 1895 by Sister Mary Irene of the Sisters of Charity, under whose management it is conducted. The main building, formerly the Whiting mansion, which is used exclusively for men, accommodates two hundred patients. The House of Nazareth, a branch of this hospital, is used for the accommodation of women and children, and has a capacity of two hundred.

St. Francis Hospital occupies the entire block between One Hundred Forty-second and One Hundred Forty-third Streets and Brook and St. Ann's Avenues, and is under the direct charge of the Sisters of the Poor of St. Francis; the same denomination as that having charge of St. Joseph's Hospital. It is one of the Borough's largest and most modern charity hospitals and treats diseases of all kinds. The institution has over four hundred beds at the disposal of patients regardless of sect or nationality. For the treatment of non-paying poor it is reimbursed by the City.

Union Hospital is located in the old Eden mansion, formerly occupied by Fordham Hospital, at No. 2456 Valentine Avenue, corner of One Hundred Eighty-eighth Street. It is a general hospital for the treatment of all ailments and has many prominent physicians connected with it. It is maintained entirely by voluntary contributions and membership in the Union Hospital Association, and receives patients of all creeds, sects or nationalities. During the first year of its existence over five hundred surgical operations were performed by its surgeons including the most severe and difficult.

Riverside Hospital, on North Brother Island, is a city institution for the isolation of contagious and infectious diseases. It has accommodations for five hundred patients. Its ideal location on the Sound is one of the factors that help to effect many cures; it is under the charge of Bellevue and Allied Hospitals.

The Home for Incurables, on Third Avenue between One Hundred Eighty-first Street and One Hundred Eighty-fourth Streets,

is one of the oldest institutions in The Bronx. It originated in 1866 in a small rented house in West Farms, the Old Jacob Lorillard mansion; but it rapidly outgrew its limited accommodations. Thru the generosity of the late Catherine Lorillard Wolfe, the spacious grounds upon which the institution now stands were deeded to the Home in 1873. During the forty-six years of its existence 3,261 patients of both sexes suffering from "incurable" diseases, not contagious nor infectious, have found a home there. Of this number two per cent have left the institution cured, while 1,019 were discharged for various reasons. There are at present about 286 invalids in the Home.

At its new quarters No. 459 East One Hundred Forty-first Street, the Bronx Eye and Ear Infirmary has been doing excellent work for the last nine years. Persons suffering from diseases of the eye, ear, nose or throat who are unable to pay for professional services are accorded free treatment at the infirmary. They have now also opened a dental clinic.

A new Bronx Hospital is to be erected in the neighborhood of Kingsbridge Road and Sedgwick Avenue. It will be on the style of Fordham Hospital, with excellent ambulance service, and is to be directly connected with Bellevue and the allied hospitals.

In addition to the hospitals already mentioned, there are many church and private societies who supply medicine and medical assistance to the poor and needy.

Among the benevolent and charitable institutions, the New York Catholic Protectory, situated on Walker Avenue and the Unionport Road in Westchester, ranks as the largest. It was founded in 1863, and since its doors opened it has sheltered and educated approximately 50,000 wayward and destitute juveniles. Like all truly great religious and benevolent enterprises, its beginning was small, but the field was so large and worthy that many prominent men were influenced to aid Archbishop Hughes and the Brothers of the Christian Schools in this great charity work. The present site at Westchester, covering an area of 114 acres, was purchased June 9th, 1865, and cost \$40,000.

There are three classes admitted to this institution—those under fourteen years of age, who, with the written consent of their parents or guardians, may be intrusted to it for protection or reformation; those between seven and sixteen years of age committed as idle, truant, vicious or homeless by order of a magistrate;

and those of a like age transferred by the Department of Public Charities. The boys, in charge of the Christian Brothers of the Catholic Church, receive a general school education and are taught trades, such as printing, electrotyping, bookbinding, shoe, brush, harness, and paper box making, baking, farming, tailoring, chair caning, brick laying, plumbing, telegraphy, blacksmithing, wheel-wrighting, carpentering, painting, drawing, etc.

The girls, under the tutelage of the Society of St. Vincent de Paul, also receive a general school education and are taught machine sewing, typewriting, cooking, laundry work, telegraphy and music. The famous Protectory Band has won an enviable reputation in the musical world and is a great credit to the institution.

The Peabody Home for Aged and Indigent Women at Boston Road and One Hundred Seventy-ninth Street was founded in 1874, and is a free and non-sectarian institution for white women over sixty-five years of age. The Home is supported entirely by voluntary subscriptions and accommodates about thirty-five.

The Home for the Friendless at Jerome and Woodycrest Avenues, opposite Macomb's Dam Park, was opened in 1902, and aims to save from degradation, friendless and neglected children; boys under ten and girls under fourteen. It is under the control of the American Female Guardian Society. After being legally surrendered to the society, they are transferred by adoption to Christian families who, upon investigation, can give satisfactory assurance that they will provide good homes for the children.

Other philanthropic institutions are: The Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum at Fordham Heights; The Hebrew Infant Asylum; St. Philip's Parish House, and Webb's Academy and Home for Shipbuilders, mentioned elsewhere in another connection.

The New York Public Library absorbed in 1904 the Bronx Free Library and maintains five branches in beautiful Carnegie Buildings, where books and periodicals are loaned to young and old, and where reference and reading rooms accommodate scholars and students. The libraries are located at 321 East One Hundred Fortieth Street, 78 West One Hundred Sixty-eighth Street, 610 East One Hundred Sixty-ninth Street, 1866 Washington Avenue, and 3041 Kingsbridge Avenue.

It is a natural phase of human existence that a city's cemeteries expand in numbers and dimensions in direct ratio to the city's increase in size and population.

Foremost in The Bronx is Woodlawn Cemetery, at Woodlawn. It was incorporated in 1863 and covers four hundred acres of elevated, sloping lands that display the height of the landscape gardener's art and is one of the most picturesque burying grounds in the world. It is situated on the westerly side of the Bronx River, and extends to East Two Hundred Twenty-third Street.

The grounds are divided by countless pathways, walks and avenues, and the contrast of the hundreds of marble and granite columns, monuments and mausoleums against the rich, green lawns affords a rare picture. Trees of great age and splendor, beds of flowers and plants and the green beds of ivy that almost hide many of the grey-white tombs add to the delicious richness of the spot.

Representatives of some of the most prominent families in New York have tombs there. Most notable are: The Appletons, Goulds, Vanderbilts, Lorillards, Choates, Corbins, Crosbys, Butterfields, Dillons, Flaglers, Havemeyers, Sloans, and Whitneys. The remains of Lieut. De Long, and Joseph Pulitzer are also interred there. Lieut. De Long's body, with those of his comrades, were brought from the Arctic regions and interred on Chapel Hill Avenue.

One of the most imposing of the monuments in the cemetery is that of our first admiral, David Glasgow Farragut, who was buried here in 1870. The shaft is of fine white marble in the shape of a portion of a ship's mast, at the foot of which are nautical paraphernalia, a sword and symbolic shields. The inscription reads:

ERECTED
BY HIS WIFE AND SON
TO THE MEMORY OF
DAVID GLASGOW FARRAGUT,
FIRST ADMIRAL OF THE UNITED STATES NAVY
BORN JULY 5, 1801,
DIED AUGUST 14, 1870.

Bensonia Cemetery, altho now a neglected, barren tract of land known on the City Map as the "Public Place at Rae Street," was once a picturesque burial ground, in a lovely section of Morisania, densely shaded by elms, poplar and evergreen trees. The land was purchased in 1853 by Robert H. Elton, who laid out what

he termed the "House Territory of Bensonia." About three years later it came into the possession of James L. Parsball who enlarged its boundaries so that it extended from Rae Street on the south to Carr Street on the north.

In 1868 the trustees of Morrisania forbade further interments within its limits, and henceforth the cemetery has been neglected. A new street, St. Ann's Avenue, was laid out so as practically to cut the burial ground in two, and the bodies thus unearthed were removed to other cemeteries.

The extreme southeasterly section of Bensonia Cemetery was bought half a century ago by the Sons of Liberty, and here rest over 150 of its members. But the brave soldiers of the Civil War who were buried have not a tablet to indicate their resting places.

In his police history, Inspector Byrnes states that the ghouls who robbed the grave of A. T. Stewart temporarily hid his remains in this sequestered spot, and no one can accurately say whether his body rests under his costly mausoleum at Garden City.

Efforts have been made to have the City convert the Bensonia Cemetery into a public park, but as yet without success. It is hoped that in the near future the tract known as the "Public Place at Rae Street," will be transferred into a beautiful breathing place.

St. Raymond's Cemetery on the Fort Schuyler Road in Westchester is used exclusively by the Roman Catholics. It embraces eighty-six acres and has many beautiful and imposing monuments.

CHAPTER IX

OAK POINT

The "Cradle of Cuban Liberty"—Wreck of the British Frigate *Hussar*.



F the future prosperity of Bronx Park depends upon the productive and commercial activities of its people, its success is assured, for no city in the world has such natural or economic advantages. What has been done in the way of improvements is small compared to what is projected for the near future. New arteries of travel are to connect every section of the Borough with Manhattan. With the tri-borough subway under construction, and other local facilities for transportation extended, an efficient municipal and borough administration to push the work ahead, The Bronx has indeed a bright and glorious future.

So fast have events crowded one upon another since the days of Jonas Bronck, that the Borough's historic surroundings are rapidly being lost sight of.

One of the most conspicuous landmarks that was swept away by the 1906 land boom was the Casanova mansion, known as the "Cradle of Cuban Liberty." For years this famous structure had been standing a quaint, gray spectre at Oak Point, neglected and untenanted, and without a sign of life about, save the New Haven and Hartford freight station a quarter of a mile away.

The mansion was built in 1859 by Benjamin M. Whitlock, a wealthy grocer of New York, on a property consisting of fifty acres. The building cost \$350,000 when completed, and was the most imposing residence above the Harlem at that time. It is said that the door knobs were made of solid gold. As a carriage approached the gates of the estate the horses stepped on a hidden spring causing the gates to fly open; and the house had secret underground passages. The house contained one hundred rooms and the beauty in the decoration of these rooms has not been surpassed to this day.

The mansion was known as "Whitlock's Folly," and the name clung to the place until the building was destroyed. In 1867, after the death of Mr. Whitlock, his widow sold the house to Senor Yglesias Casanova, a wealthy Cuban sugar and coffee planter, for \$150,000. Senor Casanova was a leader of a band of Cuban patriots, and during the early struggles of the Cuban people for liberty, this place was the rendezvous of Cuban patriots and sympathizers. It is said that the cellars and subterranean passages



CASANOVA MANSION

were stored with powder and rifles which eventually found their way into the hands of the patriots in Havana and other Cuban cities. An underground passage had been made, running from the house to the Sound, and under cover of darkness boats, which were undoubtedly filibusters, were occasionally seen to steal into the little cove that the mansion overlooked; and, after being freighted with ammunition and other implements of war, to creep out again as mysteriously as they had entered.

After the suppression of the first Cuban revolution, Casanova, whose loyalty to his country never waned, became down-hearted, and the mansion that for many years had been the scene of revelry

and likewise of social functions, ceased to be occupied. Mr. Casanova moved to New Orleans, and the house began to fall into decay for want of care and attention.

When the war was declared between this country and Spain, Mr. Cosanova was an aged man. It is said that he returned to Spain where he died.

Just prior to the demolition of the building, the author had occasion to visit it. The once magnificent old structure appeared in a pitifully dilapidated state. The grounds surrounding it were overrun with rank weeds and other unsightly growth. The massive bronze doors, with their Spanish coat-of-arms, turned heavily upon their squeaky hinges, as if reluctant to admit the feet of common mortals.

As one entered the dimly lighted hall, he seemed to be stepping into the shadows of former ages, for everything looked so sombre and sepulchral. An unnatural hollow sound echoed and reverberated thru the spacious hall as one's footsteps fell upon the marble floor.

A hasty glance thru the rooms left one amazed at the elaborate beauty of the architecture. The decorations of each apartment were different, there being no two rooms alike. Some had panelled ceilings and walls, others were richly decorated in *fleur-de-lis* and other floral designs, with heavy carved woodwork of cherry and oak. So artistically and sumptuously were they fashioned that one was fascinated with their grandeur.

There were numerous stairways leading to the cellar, some of which were rather risky to descend, as they were narrow and dark. The cellar was strewn with old rubbish, and on the south side of the building there was a large kitchen. A rusty iron oven, a three-legged stool and an old wooden table upon which stood several broken dishes, were the only furnishings of the room. The place was musty and malodorous and shrouded in darkness. With the aid of a lantern the old tunnel was located. It was choked up with dirt and rubbish, but there was enough of it exposed to give a fair conception of what it had once been. On either side of the tunnel were half a dozen cells built of solid rock with heavy iron hinges riveted to both the floors and walls. To what use they could have been put can only be surmised. Could they speak what tales they might have unfolded!

Off Port Morris is the deepest water in the vicinity of New

York. The *Great Eastern* made her first anchorage here on her maiden trip to New York, having come in by way of the Sound.

Close by is Pot Rock where the British frigate-of-war *Hussar* sank with one hundred and seven men on board. The vessel reached New York from England on September 13, 1780, carrying



SUBTERRANEAN PASSAGE AND CELLS

American prisoners and laden with a mass of gold, silver and copper coin with which to pay off the British forces in the Colonies. Rumors having reached the English Admiralty that New York City was about to fall into the hands of the Americans, the *Hussar* was given orders to sail up the Sound to Newport. But it struck in the vicinity of North Brother Island and Port Morris on the 23rd of November, 1780.

It was said that she carried to the bottom with her not only

her own treasure but also three hundred and eighty thousand pounds which had been transferred from the *Mercury*; another British vessel. Numerous futile attempts have been made since 1818 to recover the treasure, and over a quarter of a million dollars have been sunk in the endeavors. In 1819 her guns and upper sheathing were brought to light. One treasure-seeker unearthed from the wreck fifteen guineas, a number of relics, including some beer mugs, inscribed "GEORGE III. Rex." and a cannon now in the museum of Worcester, Mass. Copper rivets of the prisoners' mana-



LEGGETT'S LANE

cles, projectiles, and parts of the ship's woodwork have also been found.

Finally Secretary Gresham of the New York State Department exploded the myth of the lost treasure. He examined closely the report of the Admiralty Office and the *logs* of the *Hussar* and the *Mercury*, but found no mention of any treasure. A report of Fletcher Betts, an officer of the *Hussar*, was discovered which stated that there had been twenty thousand pounds in gold on the *Hussar*, but that two days before the disaster the money had been delivered to the Commissary General at New York; Betts himself having assisted in the transfer.

Near the Longwood Club House at Southern Boulevard and

Leggett Avenue, formerly Leggett's Lane, is the site of a Revolutionary cave. There was a skirmish close by between the British and the Americans, and the patriots were forced to flee. They carried their dead along with them, and when they reached this cave they hastily concealed the corpses of their comrades.

One of the SHOW PLACES of the Bronx



HUNT'S POINT PLAZA COMMUNITY BUILDING
163d STREET AND SOUTHERN BOULEVARD

JAMES F. MEEHAN, Architect, Builder and Owner

This magnificent structure, designed and erected by its owner, James F. Meehan, the prominent architect, is indeed a "community" of itself. It contains:

Many Showy Shops, connected by brilliantly lighted and artistically decorated arcades where the wares of leading merchants are displayed;

Palm Garden with domed ceiling and many white be-decked tables almost hidden by tropical verdure, and where a string orchestra adds to the delight of the diners;

The Beautiful Theatre, in which 2000 persons can be seated;

The Roof Garden, high above the hot streets, where gentle breezes cool and refresh one and add so materially to the comfort of the patrons;

The Ball Room, finished in white and gold, with balcony and loges, with neither pillar nor column to obstruct the view;

The Banquet Hall, especially equipped for dinner-dances, the Billiard Rooms, Cafes, Private Banquet Rooms, Club and Lodge Rooms and office accommodations for various professional men and women.

One of the important features of the building is its accessibility

The Hunts Point Plaza is destined to become one of the greatest shopping, social and theatre centers of New York City, being at the junction of three very important arteries of transit, 163rd Street, Southern Boulevard and Hunts Point Avenue. Each of these thoroughfares is 100 feet wide. The handsome new station of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad, recently completed, which will be also used by the New York, Boston and Westchester Railroad at this point, is one short block distant, while the Hunts Point Station will be an express stop of the new Lexington Avenue subway.

TELEPHONES 2964 TREMONT
2965

BRONX TAXI CAB CO.

BOSTON ROAD GARAGE

HARRY L. HILL, MANAGER



PAINT SHOP
MACHINE SHOP

REPAIRING

SUPPLIES
ACCESSORIES

1323 BOSTON ROAD

NEAR McKINLEY SQUARE

NEW YORK

Tel. 2246-3001 Tremont

R A N D A L L
FRANKLIN AVE. & 169th ST.
R E A L E S T A T E

PATTON

Commercial Schools

McKINLEY BLDG., on 169th St.
BERGEN BLDG., on Tremont Ave.
MEEHAN BLDG., 961 So. Boulevard

Known and Recognized for Thorough Work.
Finest School Rooms in the City.
Come Uptown to School.
Better Light, Better Air, Cheaper Tuition and
Better Work.

Come and See Us

Before Buying Elsewhere
We can Save You Money and Challenge
Competitors to Beat our Prices

We Carry a Complete line of

High Grade Bicycles & Motorcycles

Of all Makes and Models. Also do Repairing
of all Descriptions, Brazing and Vulcanizing at
half usual prices

SERINIDES BROS.

639 E. 169th ST., NEW YORK CITY
Telephone Tremont 5175

CHAPTER X

HUNT'S POINT

Colonial and Revolutionary Days—The Story of Joseph Rodman Drake—A Visit to "God's Little Acre."



NE by one the old landmarks of The Bronx are disappearing. The few that have been preserved are worth more than a casual inspection. There are few places in the Borough about which cluster so many interesting and historical reminiscences of the Colonial and Revolutionary periods as the Hunt's Point section. A few years ago, there were many of these early landmarks standing, but the region is changing rapidly; the old sites giving way to bright, new bricks and mortar.

On April 25, 1666, Edward Jessup and John Richardson obtained from Governor Nicolls a patent for certain lands, now known as the West Farms Patent; they having previously, on March 12, 1663, purchased the Indian rights. These lands lay along the west bank of the Bronx River, bounding "to the midst of the said river" running from the Fordham line south to the Sea or East River, and westerly to a little brook called *Sackwrahung*, or Bungay Creek, which ran along about where Intervale Avenue is now located.

On obtaining possession of this patented land, Jessup and Richardson set aside two home plots, each consisting of thirty acres of upland and eight acres of meadow. These were located on the old Hunt's Point Road just south of the present Lafayette Avenue. The Dickey and Spofford properties on the east of the old road, include within their bounds Richardson's thirty acres and most of the two meadow parcels. This home-lot vested, in 1679, in Gabriel Leggett, thru his wife Elizabeth, a daughter of Richardson, and remained in a branch of the Leggett family down to 1836. It was known as Barretto's Point.

Historians give but meagre information regarding John Richardson, but speak of Edward Jessup as a most remarkable man,

not because he was a magistrate and a large land owner, or because he sprang from an ancient and illustrious English family; but, because he was a brave, daring, upright man, full of restless energy, and the recognized champion of the colonists. Among his neighbors, he was popularly known as Goodman Jessup, and in 1665, he was one of Westchester's two delegates sent to the Convention of Towns held in Hempstead, Long Island—the first representative and deliberative body that assembled in the Colony.

In that convention Jessup boldly advocated the right of the people to elect their own magistrates, instead of having those officers selected and appointed by the King.

This convention is referred to by historians as the precursor of the elective judiciary system of our State—a system which has been aptly described as “the growth of the soil.”

Edward Jessup was the progenitor of a family who became distinguished in the annals of our country, and among whom was Major General Thomas Sidney Jessup, a hero of the War of 1812, and of the Mexican War, and who was prominently mentioned as a Democratic candidate for the Presidency of the United States.

Edward Jessup, on his death in 1666, devised his interest in the patent to Elizabeth Jessup, his widow. She married one Robert Meacham in 1668, and they in the same year conveyed the Jessup interest in the patent to her son-in-law, Thomas Hunt, Jr., who married Elizabeth Jessup, the daughter of Edward Jessup. It was after this Thomas Hunt, the son of Thomas Hunt of the Grove Farm Patent, that Hunt's Point received its name.

In 1669 Hunt sold his home lot on which he then resided, and built on a parcel of land at the north end of what is now Barretto's Point, near the old Landing Road. Around this section we find the early houses were erected.

Later, Richardson or Leggett, Richardson's son-in-law, erected a house west of the old Hunt's Point Road, south of the present Spofford Avenue, and near Bound Brook, on the land which also was acquired by the Leggett branch, and in which Gabriel Leggett, the second, lived, dying there about 1786. This property also remained in the possession of the Leggett family down to 1850.

Richardson and Hunt entered upon and cultivated parts of the present Hunt's Point. Richardson used a parcel of about twenty acres of upland at its southerly end along the Sound, probably as a cornfield, and both cut the meadows on the east side

of the Point; Richardson cutting the upper, and Hunt the lower end.

It would appear that disputes soon arose between them as to their occupations of the Point, and to settle the same they appointed four commissioners in 1669 to adjust the differences and make a division of the lower end of the patented lands. This the commissioners did, awarding Richardson the twenty acres so occupied by him, and sixteen acres of meadow, cut by him at the northwest corner of Hunt's Point, and Barretto's Point on the west, which last mentioned point they called in their report the "Long Neck"; while they awarded to Hunt all the rest of Hunt's Point, which they called the "Cornfield Neck," and certain meadows at its upper end.

The old Hunt's Point Road, which ran thru the middle of the patent down and into the Point was no doubt opened first at its lower end and used by Hunt and Richardson, while the old Landing Road which branched from it and ran into the Barretto's Point, or "Long Neck" lands, traces of which are still visible at its junction with the Hunt's Point Road, was opened prior to 1700.

About 1700 Thomas Hunt's eldest son, Thomas, acquired the Richardson twenty acres at the south end, and his father's interest in the rest of the Point, which was then and for many years thereafter called the "Planting Neck." The Indian name was *Quinnahung*. This property remained in this branch of the Hunt family down to the middle of the last century.

While mentioning the names of "Cornfield Neck" and "Planting Neck," we might incidentally call attention, as a matter of historical information, to names given other parts of the Point; for instance, the "Little Neck" which lay along the old Hunt's Point Road, at the upper end of the Point east of the Barretto Homestead. On this road at the upper end of the Little Neck, about 250 feet north of the Eastern Boulevard, was the old gate or entrance to the Hunt property on Hunt's Point. Alongside of the old road, and just west of the angle where it turns toward the Hunt and Leggett cemetery, is an old well nearly filled in, which was probably the old well known as "Richardson's well," while on the east side of the Point, near the easterly end of the Eastern Boulevard, is a district, known for 200 years as the "Fox Hills," which probably derived its name from the fact that it was at one time a fox haunt.

In 1680 Hunt and Richardson arranged for a division of the upper end of the patent into twelve great lots, but before the division was completed Richardson died. In 1681 Hunt and Richardson's widow, who acted on behalf of Richardson's heirs, completed the division by drawing lots, each taking six lots. Hunt divided his six, except one which he sold, among his sons and grandson. The tract was therefore called the "Twelve Farms" as well as West Farms.

Edward Jessup had three children: Elizabeth, who married Thomas Hunt, the second, about 1662; Hannah and Edward, the latter two probably by a second wife. There is much confusion in the old records with reference to Elizabeth Jessup, wife of Edward Jessup, and Elizabeth Jessup, daughter of Edward Jessup. There is a deed extant, dated June 20th, 1668, recording the purchase by Thomas and Elizabeth Hunt from "Robert Beachem and Elizabeth, formerly the wife of Edward Jessup."

John Richardson also had three children: Berthia, who married John Ketcham; Mary, who became the wife of Joseph Hadley; and Elizabeth, who was espoused to Gabriel Leggett.

Thomas and Elizabeth Hunt are the progenitors of a large family scattered all over the United States. Gabriel and Elizabeth Leggett are the ancestors of the Leggett, Fox and Tiffany families of West Farms.

Mrs. Richardson afterwards, in or about July, 1683, married Captain Thomas Williams, and on her death the Richardson interest, consisting of the Legget, Hadley and Ketcham families, in 1695, divided their interests in the patent among themselves.

At the southern end of Hunt's Point, the old "Grange" was erected, which still stands as a mute memorial of those Colonial days. This famous old structure, which has withstood the storms of over two centuries, and in which generations have lived and died, is fast falling into decay for want of repairs and attention. For years this picturesque relic of bygone days has been the chief attraction at Hunt's Point, but its inevitable downfall, when some factory or dwelling will later take its place, is but a few years distant.

There is much romance woven about this quaint building. During the struggle for independence, it was occupied by Thomas Hunt, the fourth, the grandfather of Montgomery Hunt, a noted financier, and a Presidential Elector in 1816, who voted for James

Monroe for President, and who was the father of that eminent jurist, Judge Ward Hunt of the Court of Appeals of the State and of the Supreme Court of the United States.

Thomas Hunt, the fourth, was a patriot and a staunch adherent of the principles which his great-grandfather had embodied in the Charter of Liberties in 1683. He was prominent in all affairs pertaining to the separation of the Colonies from the Mother Country. He was an influential member of the Committee of Safety, and was instrumental in organizing the West Farms and Fordham Company of Minute Men, in which no less than seven



HUNT'S MANSION

members of his own family enlisted. During the Revolution he espoused the American cause. He was the friend and confidant of Washington, who relied implicitly upon his calm judgment, his patriotic courage, and his thoro knowledge of the country.

The British frigate *Asia* was kept at anchor in the Sound near his home. His estate was devastated and his family driven from their home. One of the cannon balls, which was embedded in the west brick wall, where it lodged until a few years ago, is now in the writer's possession.

There appears to be much doubt among historians as to the

exact age of the old mansion. One historian gives the date of its erection as 1688, while others give much later years.

Thomas Hunt, Sr., on conveying the "Planting Neck" property to his son Thomas in 1698, and again executing a deed in 1718—shortly after which he died—mentions his new dwelling and orchard containing three acres.

Traditions are numerous regarding the building of the old mansion. It is said that when Hunt first began to erect the building, lumber commanded a very high price, as a result of a heavy tax which had been levied upon building material, and he decided to construct his of stone, of which there was an abundance in



RELICS FOUND IN HUNT'S MANSION

the neighborhood. Hardly had he put up the west wall, however, when the tax was removed and he completed the building with lumber. The girders and rafters used in its construction were hewn from solid oak, while the laths used in the interior walls, rough and irregular, were made of strips of ash. The chimneys were built of the bricks brought over as ballast by the Dutch traders. The ceilings are low, and the closets with which each room is supplied open in two parts. The open fireplace in the living room, without which no old mansion was perfect, is crumbling away with age and is no longer used. Across the hallway is the kitchen. The last occupant replaced the Dutch oven by a modern stove.

The upper chambers are reached by a narrow but substantial stairway. The tower, which gives the house the appearance of a fort, is reached by a spiral stairway from the living room. It is so narrow that only one person at a time can ascend it. This was apparently so constructed as a safeguard in emergency, should admittance be gained within the house by the wily Indians who frequently made attacks upon it.

For many years the "Grange" was the residence of Joseph Rodman Drake, the poet who won immortal fame as the author of "The American Flag" and "Culprit Fay." It was this gifted young poet who celebrated the rural beauties of The Bronx in some of his most charming verse:

THE BRONX

I sat me down upon a green bank side,
Skirting the smooth edge of a gentle river,
Whose waters seemed unwilling to glide,
Like parting friends, who linger while they sever;
Enforced to go, yet seeming still unready,
Backward they wind their way in many a wistful eddy.

Gray o'er my head the yellow-vested willow
Ruffled its hoary top in the fresh breezes,
Glancing in light, like spray on a green billow,
Or the fine frost work which young winter freezes,
When first his power in infant pastime trying,
Congeals sad autumn's tears on the dead branches lying.

From rocks around hung the loose ivy dangling,
And in the clefts sumach of liveliest green,
Bright rising-stars the little beach was spangling,
The gold-cap sorrel from his gauzy screen,
Shone like a fairy, enchased and beaded,
Left on some morn, when light flash'd in their eyes unheeded.

The hum-bird shook his sun-touched wings around,
The blue-finch carolled in the still retreat;
The antic squirrel capered on the ground,
Where lichens made a carpet for his feet.
Thro' the transparent waves, the ruddy minkle
Shot up in glimmering sparks, his red fins tiny twinkle.

There were the dark cedars, with loose mossy tresses,
 White-powder'd dog trees, and stiff hollies flaunting,
 Gaudy as rustics in their May-day dresses,
 Blue pellorets from purple leaves upslanting
 A modest gaze, like eyes of a young maiden
 Shining beneath dropp'd lids the evening of her wedding.

The breeze fresh springing from the lips of morn,
 Kissing the leaves, and sighing so to lose 'em,
 The winding of the merry locust's horn,
 The glad sighs spring gushing from the rock's bare bosom,
 Sweet sighs, sweet sounds, all sights, all sounds excelling;
 Oh! 'twas a ravishing spot, form'd for a poet's dwelling.

And I did leave thy loveliness, to stand
 Again in the dull world of earthly blindness,
 Pain'd with the pressure of unfriendly hands,
 Sick of smooth looks, agued with icy kindness;
 Left I for this thy shades, where none intrude,
 To prison wandering thought and mar sweet solitude.

Yet I will look upon thy face again
 My own romantic *Bronx*, and it will be
 A face more pleasant than the face of men.
 Thy waves are old companions, I shall see
 A well-remembered form in each old tree,
 And hear a voice long loved in thy wild minstrelsy.

Joseph Rodman Drake was born in New York City on August 7, 1795, and was a lineal descendant of the Colonial Drakes, settlers of Eastchester. Left an orphan at an early age, he was placed under the care of a guardian. As a boy he was fond of rowing his boat among the inlets of the upper East River where he could steal off by himself unmolested and spend the long summer afternoons in the shade of some willow tree along the river bank.

The happiest hours of his boyhood days he passed in the environs of Hunt's Point which gave inspiration to his verses. It was while he lived in the old "Grange" that he became acquainted with the daughter of Henry Eckford, the well-known shipbuilder. He commenced the study of medicine under Dr. Nicholas Romaine in 1813, received his degree in 1816, and in the same year he married Miss Eckford. After a visit to Europe and to New Orleans in a vain effort to restore his failing health, Drake died of con-

sumption, September 21, 1820. at the age of twenty-five, before his art as a poet had fully matured.

"There will be less sunshine for me hereafter," said Halleck, "now that Joe is gone."

The association of Halleck and Drake in the most intimate of friendships is the pleasantest incident in the history of American letters. The two poets charmed the town, in 1819, with a series of humorous satirical verses which they contributed to the New York *Evening Post* under the signature of "Croaker & Co."

Judged by what he had begun to do, this young poet was cut down at the opening of a promising career. Had the author of "The Culprit Fay," "American Flag," and "The Bronx" lived to a mature age, the prose fancies of Irving might have found a counterpart in the verse of Drake, inspired by the enchanted ground along the banks of the Hudson.

In memory of the intimate friendship that existed between them, Fitz-Greene Halleck wrote, at the death of Drake, a touching tribute beginning with these exquisite lines:

Green be the turf above thee,
Friend of my better days;
None knew thee but to love thee,
Nor named thee but to praise.

The author shall never forget his first visit to Hunt's Point some ten years ago and with what frequency he visited it thereafter. He had seen rural country—much of it—but nothing has ever taken so firm a hold upon his imagination as that piece of ground. He never could fathom why it appealed to him so strongly, perhaps it was the quaint old mansions and shady lanes that lured him to these scenes; but whatever the cause the spot had cast a bewitching spell upon him and he passed many a pleasant idle hour there.

During his rambles thru this isolated region he collected from old residents many an interesting tale of its early history, for few regions have been more kindly disposed than this to the preservation of their traditions.

One of the first points of interest the author was shown was

the quaint little Hunt burying ground* in which early settlers were interred and which is the last resting place of Joseph Rodman Drake.

Until Park Commissioner Higgins sent a force of men there in the summer of 1910 to clear away the over-grown weeds and brambles and to cement the broken pieces of headstones together, the repose of the little cemetery was rarely disturbed, and all summer long the birds and insects raised an unceasing song around the weed-grown graves of the forgotten dead; the winter spread a



HUNT'S POINT CEMETERY IN 1900

blanket of white snow over it which remained until spring came slowly and reluctantly to this upland resting place.

And so the seasons came and passed, leaving the finger marks of time and ruin. Yet on a summer's day the little knoll with its crumbling, weather-beaten old tombstones is really a delightful spot, and from its summit one can obtain an excellent panoramic view of the surrounding country.

* The little "God's Acre" is less than half an acre in area and is located on the summit of a wooded knoll a short distance from the Hunt's Point Station on the New Rochelle branch of the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad running from Mott Haven to New Rochelle.

Before you are the placid, rippling, flashing waters of the Sound dotted here and there by the white sails of pleasure craft; while in the distance rise the dim bluish outlines of Long Island. Toward the west lies the Metropolitan City of Greater New York in all its majestic splendor. Silhouetted against the sky are the outlines of the Cathedral of St. John the Divine, St. Luke's Hospital, Columbia Library, and Grant's Tomb as well as the College of the City of New York and Columbia University with their many outlying buildings. The populous Bronx stretches northward, and



GRAVE OF JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE

the green rolling slopes of Westchester extend toward the east. The evidences of vigorous life and progress viewed from this little resting place of those so long dead bring strongly to mind the achievements of our own era.

But when the wintry clouds scurry over the hill, and the rain beats down the withered weeds and dark graves, the burying ground seems weird and desolate. Years of wind and weather show plainly their imprints on the fifty or more tombstones scattered about, some of which, overspread with a coat of green moss, and sunken deep into the sod, date back nearly two and a half centuries.

Some of these grave stones may have been new and untarnished when Washington's Continentals in their retreat from Long Island, trudged along the old Colonial road which winds around the little hillock, and when Lafayette revisited this country in 1824. The noted French General, after crossing the famous "Kissing Bridge" which stood to the right of Southern Boulevard and Lafayette Lane, "paused in silent meditation at the grave of Joseph Rodman Drake," and then passed thru the narrow lane which was afterwards widened and named "Lafayette Avenue" in his honor.

Surrounding one plot in the old cemetery was attached a rusty iron chain. It has long mouldered away from all but one of its fastenings to which it still clung creaking and rattling like a dungeon fetter as the wind tossed it to and fro. Close by lay a shattered marble shaft which the angry winds had hurled from its pedestal and tall weeds and rank growth were blotting out its inscriptions. Decadence due to neglect was manifest everywhere in this ruined city of the dead.

Facing the entrance of the cemetery from the south stands a plain marble shaft seven feet high which marks the grave of Joseph Rodman Drake.

Whatever fitness there may have been in burying Drake in that particular spot, was lost in the neglect into which his grave was afterward permitted to fall.

In 1891 the Brownson Literary Union in appreciation of his genius restored the monument to a semblance of its former neatness. The inscription reads:

SACRED
to the Memory
of
JOSEPH R. DRAKE, M.D.
who died Sept. 21st
1820
Aged 25 Years
None knew him but to love him,
Nor named him but to praise.

RENOVATED BY THE
BROWNSON LITERARY UNION
July 25, 1891.

The little cemetery is also the final resting place of veterans of the various Colonial wars and of Continental soldiers, members of the Hunt, Leggett, Willett and allied families.

Directly opposite the Hunt burying ground is a small en-



SLAVE BURYING GROUND

closure in which the slaves of early residents were interred. It is also said that "Bill," the negro pilot of the wrecked British frigate *Hussar*, was buried there:

"After the voice of shrieking winds
And tossing of the angry deep,
In kind embrace of Mother Earth
Resting, like child in quiet sleep."

CHAPTER XI

THE ROMANCE OF BESSIE WARREN

The Daughter of Old Simon, the Landlord of the "King's Arms"—Her Love for the Dashing Officer Who Was Branded a British Spy—The Maiden Who Did Not Forget; But Answered the Summons of a Beckoning Spirit and Was Taken over the Great Beyond.



THE consolidation of The Bronx with the Greater City in 1897, brought about many changes. When the Hunt's Point section was mapped out into regular city streets, the little "God's Acre" was threatened with destruction, for a street was to be cut directly thru its center. When this became public a storm of protests arose from various historical societies and literary associations to prevent the obliteration of the old cemetery. One of the staunchest champions for its preservation was the Hon. James L. Wells, and thru his untiring efforts, combined with other pressure that was brought to bear, the original street plan was finally altered and the historic spot saved. By way of compromise the city turned the burial plot into a park and it has since been known as the Joseph Rodman Drake Park.

Of the many headstones crumbling into decay, there was one which has been marvelously preserved, and stood as firm and erect as when first placed there. It was the grave of Elizabeth Willett, who departed this life the 19th of June, 1772, aged 27 years, three months—so the inscription on the tombstone averred. Here are the lines graven beneath her name:

Behold and see, as you pass by;
As you are NOW, so ONCE was I,
As I am NOW, you SOON will be,
Prepare for DEATH and FOLLOW me.

Why was so grim an epitaph chosen for her? An involuntary shudder passes over one as he muses over these lines:

" 'Tis the wink of the eye, 'tis the draught of a breath
From the blossom of health to the paleness of death,
From the gilded saloon to the bier and the shroud—
Oh! Why should the spirit of mortal be proud?"

One wonders whether the Elizabeth Willett resting there could be the Elizabeth Warren whose romance, full of pathos and sorrow has been handed down from parent to child for more than a century, and who is said to be sleeping in an unmarked grave somewhere in the neighborhood.

Whether Elizabeth Warren really existed in life, or was merely the fanciful creation of a romancer can not be authentically stated, as historical research has failed to reveal her identity.

Tradition tells us that when Elizabeth Warren was the belle of Hunt's Point, that section was considerably smaller than it is today—there were the meeting house, the blacksmith's shop, the "King's Arms," and a dozen or two cottages. These were all, but in those days such pioneer buildings constituted no mean village.

Elizabeth was the daughter of old Simon Warren, the landlord of the "King's Arms" and she entered her maturity at a time when the air was overcast with rumors of approaching trouble. Already the first sign of that unrest which was to culminate in the Revolution, was plain to all who had eyes to see and ears to hear; and it was said that there was no better place to observe these symptoms than in the tap-room of Warren's inn.

Warren came of that New England stock which had turned England topsy-turvy, and which was later to suffer severely for it, tho with ultimate happy results. The English consequently had no more bitter enemy in all the restless Colony than Simon Warren. To his place it was, therefore, that young hot-heads of the neighborhood resorted when they desired to discuss the manner in which they were to rid themselves of the insufferable yoke of the Mother Country.

One evening at the close of a stormy day, a mud-bespattered traveler entered the "King's Arms" and sat long before the fire with old Simon, while pretty Bessie, the landlord's daughter, brought them many a foaming tankard to help the talk along.

Now, it never occurred to the hospitable Simon that the polite stranger he was entertaining was a British spy who had been sent to feel the pulse of the Colonies. Having discovered that Simon's

inn was the meeting place for the revolutionary hot-heads, he decided that he couldn't gauge the sentiments of the people better than at the old inn.

He was young, handsome, learned; and, before he had been at the "King's Arms" very long, he had captivated Bessie's heart, and in their rambles thru the lanes of Westchester, he poured into her innocent heart the witcheries of romance and poetry. So sentimental were his words and so gallant his actions, that Bessie looked up to her youthful admirer as a being of a superior order; and, before she was aware of it, she had blushingly consented to become his wife. On the very day he had asked for Bessie's hand, came the discovery that he was a British spy. They found him in the garret with his ear to a crack in the floor listening to the fiery speeches of the Patriots' Club in the room below.

It was a wild night—outside the inn the great elms tossed their branches about like giants in agony. The signboard groaned as it swung before the gate. The fury of the storm kept the happy Bessie awake long after she had said "Good night," and retired. It seemed to her that she heard a shot—another, and another. The wind lulled for a second; and, as she listened, in the sullen silence there was an awful cry. Then the storm swept down again and she told herself that it was nothing but a loose shutter; but her nervous fear worked on her imagination until she believed a tragedy had occurred.

They told Bessie the next morning that her lover was a spy and that he had fled like a thief in the night with the dread of discovery.

The blow came like a thunderclap from a clear sky to Bessie. It was not long after this that a great shadow darkened her life. None knew whether she suspected the truth about the disappearance of her handsome lover, but many of the country-folk round about declared that they had seen a ghastly figure wandering nightly over the hillsides, always looking for something it never found.

Like a beautiful lily cut down, Bessie began visibly to pine away. Everything possible was done to divert her thoughts and bring the color back to her pallid cheeks—but all in vain. Something had gone out of her life that could not be replaced. Then one day old Simon found his daughter sitting at the window of her room apparently gazing earnestly out at something. He called

to her, but there was no answer; he touched her with a feeling of awe, for there was that about her that transcended his understanding. His eyes filled with tears; he broke away from her with a great cry. He understood: Bessie had found her lost lover.

Tradition says that they laid her tenderly in a grove of tall elms on the hillside where she watched nightly for the return of her lover:

"In vain her vigils did the maiden keep—
This patriot daughter with her love-lit eyes—
Waiting her absent lover's slow return
Beneath Westchester's mellow evening skies.

Dim figures they of that far-distant strife
Whose swords are sheathed, with all their dent and stain,
This warrior bold, this sweetheart desolate
Wounded to death by war's stern thrust of pain.

Yet still above thy turf-grown bed, sweet girl,
Walk other lovers of this latest day,
Who hear thy tale of passion and of grief
And in their reverance hold thee dear alway.

So shall the memory of thy woman's trust
More beauteous ever grow, as swift time flies,
Like flowers that blossom from the common dust
And shed their fragrance as of Paradise."

CHAPTER XII

THE "NEUTRAL GROUND"

The Indian Cave—Leggett and His Stolen Mare—The Westchester Guides—Barretto's Point—A Wooden Armchair That Came over with the Pilgrim Fathers.



THE most powerful of the tribes of aborigines which inhabited The Bronx were the Weckquaesgeeks. Relics of their settlements are still to be found along the shores of the Bronx and the East Rivers. Of these prehistoric relics, perhaps the most interesting is the "Indian cave," which is located a short distance east of the Hunt burying ground and about three hundred yards north of the bridge crossing the creek. This is said to have been the favorite haunt of the redmen, and it is there that many treaties were made with the whites. Close by are the remains of hastily thrown up earthworks of Lord Howe's Army.

During the dark days of the Revolution, the little settlements along the East River endured many hardships and privations. With the retreat of the American army in November, 1776, Westchester County was overrun with British refugees, known as "Cowboys," who committed all sorts of depredations and raids upon the defenseless farmers. Equally rapacious were the American marauders, called "Skinners," who made frequent raids upon the loyalist inhabitants of the county. These bands of cowboys and of skimmers carried on their plundering expeditions into the so-called "Neutral Ground"—a strip of land between the American outposts under the command of General Heath and those of the British under Lieutenant-Colonel James De Lancey.

An interesting story is told about Thomas Leggett, whose ancestors had been resident proprietors of the "Planting Neck" section.

Thomas Leggett was the oldest son of Gabriel Leggett, 2nd. He strongly resented the invasion of the British. He organized a vigilance committee of Home Guards, as they were called among

the young men of the neighborhood, and patrolled the highways. At the first approach of the enemy they were to give the alarm and as they were equipped with the latest firearms, they hoped to drive invaders off their lands. However, they were caught napping. A party of British refugees got thru their lines unobserved, and seized Leggett just as he was leading his favorite mare out of the barn. Being unarmed he had to submit to their outrages. They carried off the young mare, which had been a gift of his par-



INDIAN CAVE

ents, along with the other property. Leggett was furious; he threatened to have the marauders hanged; but they only mocked him as they went on their way. He followed them, however, hoping to meet some of the Guards, but they all seemed to have vanished. When the party reached the junction of what are now Tremont Avenue and Boston Road, two Continental soldiers rose from behind a stone wall and fired. The man leading the horse was shot and he fell. The mare, finding herself free, took to her heels and ran home, much to the delight of her owner.

The County of Westchester contributed largely to the American cause. Versed in every hidden path of the region, the West-

chester guides were of invaluable service to Washington and his troops.

The foremost of these patriotic-spirited guides were Abraham and Michael Dyckman, whose old homestead at King's Bridge Road (Broadway) and Hawthorne Street, rebuilt at the close of the Revolution, is still pointed out as the only remaining Dutch farmhouse on the road.

In May, 1780, Michael Dyckman acted as guide to Captain Cushing of the Massachusetts Line in his attack upon De Lancey's Corps. The Americans captured more than forty prisoners.

Michael Dyckman figured in an exploit on the 26th of March, 1782, when, with thirteen volunteer horsemen he made an excursion to Morrisania, and took five of De Lancey's corps and five horses. On their return they were pursued by a party of the enemy's horse, but when the British came near, the gallant Westchester Volunteers faced right about, charged vigorously, took one man prisoner with his horse, and put the rest to flight. The enemy again appeared on the old Eastchester Road but dared not renew the attack.

Abraham Dyckman was mortally wounded on March 4th, 1782, while piloting a body of volunteer horse under Captain Hunnewell (after whom Honeywell Avenue in West Farms was subsequently named). The Americans made the attack on the cantonment of De Lancey's corps just before sunrise, taking the enemy completely by surprise, killing and wounding many, and capturing twenty prisoners. De Lancey himself would perhaps have been taken prisoner had not the British loyalists fired the alarm guns and thus caused the Americans to retire. The enemy quickly started in pursuit but soon fell into an ambush set by Major Woodbridge, who with a party of light infantry had accompanied Captain Hunnewell.

The State of New York has erected a granite monument at Yorktown in memory of the patriotic services of Abraham Dyckman.

The headquarters of De Lancey's corps was the De Lancey Block House, which had stood on the site of the Peabody House (One Hundred and Seventy-ninth Street), and which was destroyed in a midnight attack by Aaron Burr in 1779. The De Lancey Pine, 150 feet high, is still one of the historic landmarks of West Farms.

Telephone, 1333 Tremont

C. SILVESTRO

MANUFACTURER AND DESIGNER OF

Electric and Gas Fixtures



REMODELING AND REFINISHING
Electrically Lighted Statuary

SALESROOM AND FACTORY: 4149 PARK AVE.

Near 176th Street

NEW YORK CITY

Telephone, 676 Tremont

TREMONT GARAGE, Inc.

A. H. SEADALE, Mgr.

STORING — **AUTOMOBILES** — RENTING

REPAIRS & ACCESSORIES

1932-4 Washington Ave., near Tremont Ave.

NEW YORK CITY

Suits Made to Order *Dresses Made to Order*
From your own material From your own material
\$6.00 Up \$3.00 Up

The Tremont \$1.00 Skirt Shop

470 TREMONT AVENUE
(ROOM 8)

BET. BATHGATE AND WASHINGTON AVES.
BRONX, N. Y. CITY

"Good Service at Low Cost"

Established
1874



Telephone
1227 Melrose

Slate and Metal ROOFING

Hot Air Furnaces Leaders
Ranges Skylights
Gutters Roofs Repaired and Painted

CHAS. H. KIRK

1109 Washington Ave. Bronx, N. Y. City

Tremont Packing House

645 Tremont Ave., near Belmont Ave.

J. OECHSNER

Wholesale and Retail Dealers in
Jersey Pork, Bologna and Provisions.
Sugar Cured Hams
and Bacon our Specialty.

GERMAN SAUSAGES

Manufactured on premises
under strictly sanitary conditions.

Phone, 5068 Tremont

Established 1889

FRANK GASS

Incorporated

Real Estate and Insurance

2215 WESTCHESTER AVE.

BRONX

Telephone Westchester 137



Rents Collected

Estates Managed

Real Estate Appraisals

Money Loaned on Bond & Mortgage



Telephone, 290 Westchester

Schultz's Hotel and Park

CHARLES A. SCHULTZ, Prop.

Newly Renovated

DANCE HALL and
BOWLING ALLEYS

The Shadiest Park in the Bronx
Automobile Sheds

2061 Westchester Avenue

Near Olmstead Ave. Unionport, N. Y.

Take Westchester Ave. Car at 128th St., 149th
St. or at Simpson St.
Also crostown Tremont Ave. Car at West
Farms direct to Park.

TELEPHONE MELROSE 1243

H. A. MEDOFF, M.D., D.O.

Optometrist

817 WESTCHESTER AVENUE
NEAR PROSPECT AVENUE
NEW YORK

EYES EXAMINED BY SCIENTIFIC METHODS

PHONE MELROSE 3319 SIMPSON ST. SUBWAY STA.

Chester Hall Music Store

WM. BAUMGARTEN, PROP.

1052 SOUTHERN BOULEVARD

NEAR WESTCHESTER AVE. BRONX, N. Y.

PIANOS CLASSICAL
SHEET MUSIC
VIOLINS POPULAR
MANDOLINS AND ALL INSTRUMENTS

"Memorial of the fallen great,
The rich and honored line,
Stands high in solitary state,
De Lancey's Ancient Pine."

Andrew Corsa, born in the Rose Hill Manor House which is situated on the grounds of Fordham University, was the last of the Westchester guides. He was called upon to act as guide to Washington and Rochambeau when he was but nineteen years of age. One time when the French and American allies were march-



MAYFLOWER CHAIRS

ing past the Morris mansion opposite Randal's Island and Snake Hill, where the British were encamped, the enemy's artillery opened fire. Scared out of his wits, young Corsa dashed for his life and took refuge behind the old Morrisania mill. Taking a furtive glance from his hiding place and seeing Washington and the other generals riding along unperturbed and heedless of anything about them, he hastily spurred on his horse and galloped back to his place on the line, where he was cheered for his courage. Andrew Corsa died in 1852, at the age of ninety-one at Bedford Park, nearly opposite the Rose Hill manor-house.

Blythe Place was a strip of land running to a point somewhat

similar to the Hunt property, southwest of the Planting Neck, and became known in later years as Barretto's Point. The property was owned by Francis J. Barretto, who for one year represented Westchester County in the State Assembly. *Blythe* the residence of Barretto, was of Revolutionary date, and when its inside shutters were closed it was a miniature fortress. Close by stood the residence of Thomas Leggett, near the Leggett Dock. The Leggetts originally came from Essex County, England, and traced their



"WOODSIDE" MANSION

ancestry back to Helmingino Leget, High Sheriff of that county in 1404. As early as 1661, Gabriel Leggett emigrated to this country. Thru the marriage of Elizabeth Richardson, daughter of John Richardson, who with Edward Jessup were the first white owners of that large tract of land, he fell heir to much of the property. In the field opposite the George Fox mansion, erected about 1848, on the long slope below the Spofford mansion, is the site of the Leggett burying ground, where ten bodies of early settlers were removed, one being that of Mayor Leggett of Westchester.

When the Pilgrim Fathers landed on Plymouth Rock, in 1620, they brought with them among their household furniture, two

wooden armchairs, which had no historical associations at that time, but were strong and sturdy and had been of great comfort to the suffering pioneers; and so, for "old-times' sake" were taken ashore. Later these chairs were presented to Governor Carvel, who took a peculiar fancy to them, because they brought back recollections of the Old World. For many years the chairs occupied a prominent place in the library of Charles V. Faile, who lived in the beautiful "Woodside" mansion which stood on the site now occupied by the plant of the American Bank Note Company on Lafayette Avenue.

Woodside was built in 1832 by E. G. Faile an importer of tea and sugar. He was regarded as a rich man for those days and, being a lover of horses, he imported fast horses from Argentina at a cost, according to tradition, of \$1,000 each in transportation alone. He drove to his place of business in Chambers Street every day and was always at his office by 9 o'clock.

CHAPTER XIII

NATHAN HALE

"I regret That I Have But One Life to Lose for My Country"—Capt. Hale, the Patriot, Scholar and Soldier, Whose Mission Brought Him Death But Spread His Name on the Living Pages of History.



HE "LOCUSTS" was another famous Revolutionary dwelling which stood upon the Faile property near Hunt's Point Road. It is said that Nathan Hale stopped here over night while reconnoitering in the neighborhood at the time the British were crossing at Hell Gate and Washington had moved his troops to Harlem Heights. It was shortly after this incident that Capt. Hale started on his expedition as spy.

The story of Hale's heroic death, and the memorable words he uttered when he was standing on the fatal ladder, will ever remain an inspiration to American hearts.

Hale was only twenty-one years old when he died. He was born in Coventry, Connecticut, June 6, 1755, and was the sixth child of a family of twelve. He entered Yale College in 1770 and was graduated with the highest honors three years later. After leaving college he became a teacher in New London, Connecticut, intending eventually to enter the ministry. Hardly had his career begun when tidings arrived of the outbreak at Lexington. His spirit was fired, and at a mass meeting of his townspeople in Minery's Tavern, he dedicated his life to the cause of American liberty.

"Let us march immediately, and not lay down our arms until we have gained our independence!" he said in most ardent tones. Before the meeting closed, a company had been formed, and at daybreak it was on its way to Boston.

It was during the siege of Boston that Hale displayed his great ability as a leader. In consideration of the services rendered there, he was commissioned a Captain.

During the summer of 1776, the American army suffered most.

The battle of Long Island had been disastrous, and a hasty retreat had been made to Manhattan Island. The outlook was discouraging. Men were ill and were dying in appalling numbers; desertions were many; the army was being rapidly decimated. Lack of food and the failure to receive pay were breeding insubordination, and not more than fourteen thousand men were fit for duty. Across the East River was a British army of about twenty-five



"THE LOCUSTS"

thousand seasoned troops, and in the Lower Bay a powerful navy lay stripped for action.

For the first time since Washington had taken the field, he was worried and depressed. On every side he saw a choice of difficulties confronting him. In a letter to the President of Congress, he writes:

"It is evident, the enemy mean to close us on the island of New York, by taking post in our rear, while the shipping secures the front, and thus, by cutting off our communication with the country, oblige us to fight them on their own terms, or surrender at discretion; or by a brilliant stroke endeavor to cut this army

in pieces, and secure the collection of arms and stores, they well know, we shall not be able soon to replace."

The question was: How could the enemy's plan be most successfully opposed and defeated? To Washington there seemed but one way of discovering Howe's plans, and that was for a competent person to enter the British lines, and procure intelligence of their designs. The duty of finding a volunteer for this delicate enterprise was left to Lieutenant Colonel Knowlton, who had distinguished himself at Bunker Hill, and who had some of the best fighters under him.

Summoning his officers for a conference, Colonel Knowlton explained to them the situation, and the vital importance of the mission. But his plea was met with cold response. The work required of them, so they argued, was degrading for men of honor and refinement. Colonel Knowlton was about to give way to despair when Captain Hale, emaciated from the effects of a recent illness, entered the room and volunteered to undertake the work requested by his Commander-in-chief. In vain Hale's brother officers tried to dissuade him, but no argument deterred him from his resolve to serve his country.

"I think I owe my country the accomplishment of an object so important, and so much desired by the Commander of our armies, and I know of no other mode of obtaining the information than by assuming a disguise and passing into the enemy's camp. I am fully sensible of the consequences of discovery and capture in such a situation, but for a year I have been attached to the army and have not rendered any material service. Yet, I am not influenced by the expectation of promotion or pecuniary reward. I wish to be useful, and every kind of service necessary for the public good becomes honorable by being necessary. If my country demands a peculiar service, its claims of the performance of that service are imperious."

Accompanied by Colonel Knowlton, Captain Hale presented himself before General Washington and received final instructions. He started on his fatal expedition from the Roger Morris house, better known as the Jumel Mansion on Harlem Heights.

Assuming his professional character of schoolmaster, he was taken down the Sound at night and landed at Great Neck in Huntington Bay where he boldly plunged into the enemy's lines.

Captain Hale was gone about two weeks, and in that time made the rounds of the entire British camps including New York, of which the enemy had taken possession on September 15th. The schoolmaster completed drawings of their defences and jotted down in Latin the information he had gathered. After completing his dangerous task, Captain Hale retraced his steps to Huntington, where a boat was to meet him and convey him to the Connecticut shore.

According to some writers, Hale was betrayed by a cousin who recognized him sitting in Widow Chichester's tavern waiting for his boat; but no proof exists for the authenticity of this report. It is more likely, however, that in the dark he mistook the boat from the British flagship *Halifax*, which had been sent to shore for water, for his own, and did not discover his mistake until he found himself a prisoner in the hands of the enemy. He was taken aboard the ship, stripped and searched. The plans and Latin memoranda were found hidden between the soles of his shoes. On this evidence, he was adjudged a spy, and immediately hurried to New York, where he landed on Saturday, September 21st, the day of the great fire which destroyed four hundred buildings. The prisoner was taken to General Howe's headquarters in the Beekman mansion, Fifty-first Street and First Avenue.

It is said that General Howe had retired to the greenhouse in the rear of the mansion, when the young patriot was brought before him. Hale denied nothing. He admitted he was a captain in Washington's army, and that he had been sent on a secret mission, and only regretted that he had not been successful.

After a brief parley he was sentenced to be executed at day-break the next morning. He was taken in charge by the notorious Cunningham, Provost Marshal of the Royal army, who boasted of having been responsible for the death of several hundred Federal prisoners, who were confined in the old sugar-house prison.

Captain Hale was thrust into one of the numerous cells beneath the prison, and here his death warrant was read to him by Cunningham. As the keeper was departing, the young patriot requested that his arms which had been securely bound might be released, and that he might have some writing materials and a light. Cunningham brutally denied him these favors, as he did also his request for a Bible. Later, however, a young officer of

Captain Hale's guard interceded, and a light, pen and paper, as well as a Bible, were given to the condemned prisoner.

The Captain passed the night writing. One letter he indited to his mother, another to his sister, and a third to his sweetheart. What happened after he finished his writing we have no means of knowing, but it is likely that he devoted the rest of his time to prayer.



Courtesy of D. Appleton & Co.

NATHAN HALE MONUMENT IN CITY HALL PARK

At daybreak the door of the cell was opened and Cunningham, accompanied by a file of guards, entered. They found Captain Hale ready to meet his fate. To Cunningham the patriot handed the letters which he had written, and as a dying request asked that they be forwarded to his family. Cunningham read the letters and in Captain Hale's presence destroyed the last message of a man about to die. When asked later why he had done this, Cunningham said: "I did not want the rebels to know they had a man who could die with such firmness."

The dawn was just breaking when Captain Hale was marched to the place of execution. Then, while the patriot stood on the rounds of the ladder, with a noose around his neck, Cunningham

New York, New York, 10th Sept. 1776
 Dear Sir
 Count of Great Britain
 The 2^d & 6th Brigades of 3^d Battⁿ of
 Light Infantry & Artillery ordered for to
 day are to March to Morristown at 9 o'clock under
 the Command of Gen^l S. Percy
 The Packet for Europe will be ready to
 sail Tuesday the 21st Inst.
 A Spy for the Enemy (by his own full
 Confession) Apprehended Last night, was
 this day Executed at 11 o'clock in front
 of the Artillery Park.
 Memorandum
 Order to take particular care that the
 necessary Houses are frequently changed
 off for this evening 10th Sept
 to Hunting Hills Hyde

PAGE FROM MEMORANDUM BOOK

demanding of his victim his last dying speech and confession. It is said that Captain Hale glanced at him with a look of contempt but paid no heed to the man's sneering remarks. Then turning to the others he impressively uttered the immortal words:

"I only regret that I have but one life to lose for my country!"

The young patriot was buried near the spot where he was executed. The site was unmarked, but it is supposed to have been under an apple tree which grew where a statue of him now stands in City Hall Park. This bronze representation of the young captain with his arms bound is one of the most pathetic figures ever wrought by a sculptor.

A few years ago, there was found in a second-hand bookstore in London a large memorandum book which had evidently belonged to some British soldier during the Revolution. The relic is of great historic value and it is now in the possession of the New York Historical Society.

One of the entries reads:

"September 22, 1776: A Spy from the Enemy (by his own full Confession) Apprehended Last night, was this day Executed at 11 o'clock in front of the Artillery."

This is said to be the only official record of the execution of Nathan Hale.

CHAPTER XIV

CLASON'S POINT

The Coney Island of The Bronx—Cornell's Neck—Three Clergymen who Hid in a Farm House in the Days of the Revolution—The Distinction of the Ferris Mansion at Zerega's Point—The Fate of Anne Hutchinson.



CROSSING the railroad bridge on Westchester Avenue and Edgewater Road, we pass what was once the beautiful Watson estate and the old Westchester golf grounds. The property is now in the hands of a real estate company, which is cutting up the land into building lots.

One of the most delightful trolley rides thru picturesque Westchester, is the trip to Clason's Point, called by the Indians *Snakapins*. The car passes thru charming country regions that would never be looked for on the very edge of New York City. Clason's Point is ideally located on the Sound, and is fast becoming famous as a summer amusement resort, having all the attractions of Coney Island.

Clason's Point is at the extremity of Cornell's Neck, which was named after its first settler, Thomas Cornell, who came in 1643 from Rhode Island with John Throckmorton and Roger Williams. Cornell had emigrated to America with his family from the shire of Essex in England, and had acquired from the Indians a tract of land lying just east of the Bronx River; here he established a plantation, which, with that of his neighbor, Jacob Jans Stoll, who had purchased Broncksland from the widow of Jonas Bronck, formed the outpost of civilization in the vicinity of New Amsterdam along the East River.

During the Indian massacre of 1643, Cornell escaped on a vessel which had just arrived in the nick of time. He later returned to his estate and received in 1646 from the Dutch authorities in New Amsterdam a patent confirming his purchase, but he was again forced by the Indians to abandon his property. After this he never more returned. His daughter Sarah, who had mar-

ried Thomas Willett, inherited the estate which remained in the possession of her descendants until 1793. The western section was sold in that year to Dominick Lynch, a wealthy Irishman; and the eastern division to Isaac Clason, after whom Clason's Point received its name.

On the extreme end of Clason's Point stood until recently the ruins of an ancient farmhouse, once the abode of Thomas and Sarah Willett. The farmhouse was shelled by Lord Howe's fleet as the ships passed on their way to Throgg's Neck, October, 1776.



WATSON MANSION

Many relics from this old structure and a part of the original Cornell house can be found at the Clason's Point Inn.

Close by is the Clason's Point Military Academy, erected as a residence by Dominick Lynch. The committee that designed the American flag met here before proceeding to Philadelphia. The Lynch mansion went successively thru the hands of the Ludlow family, the Schieffelins, and finally to the Christian Brothers of the Catholic Church who converted it into the Sacred Heart Academy and later gave it its present name.

The quaint old homestead of the Wilkins family is located at Screven's Point, which lies south of Unionport. The point was named after John Screven, a great-nephew by marriage of the

Honorable Gouverneur Morris. His father-in-law was Gouverneur Morris Wilkins, son of the Reverend Isaac Wilkins, who married Isabella Morris, the sister of the statesman and half-sister of Lewis Morris, the Signer.

The old Wilkins farmhouse famed as the building in a secret chamber of which three loyalist clergymen, Rev. Myles Cooper, president of King's College, Rev. Chandler of New Jersey and Rev. Samuel Seabury, rector of Saint Peter's Church in Westchester,



FERRIS MANSION, ZEREGA'S POINT

concealed themselves during the early days of the Revolution, is still standing. Food and drink were lowered to these men thru a hidden trap door. They finally escaped on the 1st of September, 1776, under cover of darkness to Long Island.

The ground in this vicinity was once occupied by the Siwanoy Indians who had erected a fortified castle here, whence the name "Castle Hill Neck." Adrien Block, in his voyage of discovery in 1614, spoke of seeing big Indian wigwams there. Castle Hill Neck is an elevated tract of land, sixty feet above the sea level, and is situated east of Cornell's Neck, between Wilkin's, or Pugsley, and Westchester Creeks. It was for some time the property of the

Cromwells, descendants of John Cromwell, a nephew of the Lord Protector Oliver, and was consequently known as Cromwell's Neck. In 1685 John and Elizabeth Cromwell exchanged with Thomas Hunt of Grove Farm six acres of meadow land for eight acres of upland situated upon Castle Neck. Above Jerome Avenue and One Hundred Sixty-fifth Street is the rapidly decaying Cromwell house. Nearby is Cromwell's Creek which served to propel the mill of James Cromwell, born in 1752.

The oldest house in The Bronx is said to be the Ferris Mansion at Zerega's Point. This old relic claims birth in 1687 and was owned by Josiah Hunt, the son of Thomas Hunt, the patentee of Hunt's Point. The Grove Farm of Thomas Hunt was sold in 1760 to Josiah Cousten, who in turn sold it fifteen years later to John Ferris, whose ancestor had received in 1667 a patent from Governor Nicolls for a portion of Westchester, west of Annes Hoeck. At the extreme end of this point stands "Island Hall," the stately stone Zerega Mansion, dating from 1823.

In the summer of 1642, the region of the east side of the Borough, known as Pelham Neck, was settled by Anne Hutchinson, a widow with several children, and Thomas Collins, her son-in-law, and his family. They were of English stock and had fled from New England to escape the religious persecution of the Puritans. They were the next white settlers of the Borough after Jonas Bronck.

Mrs. Anne Hutchinson came with her husband and their children from Lincolnshire, England, to Massachusetts Bay Colony on September 18, 1634. She was a woman of kind heart, of fervent religious spirit, and of unusual intellectual force and ability so that she was characterized by a contemporary, "The masterpiece of woman's wit." Her doctrine that those who possess faith are above law, gained wide support thruout the Colony. The Puritans, fearing that such preaching would lead to licentiousness, as it later did in the case of Captain John Underhill who was found guilty of adultery, banished Mrs. Hutchinson and her adherents. In 1638 she withdrew with her family and followers to Roger Williams's settlement on the Isle of Aquidneck (now Rhode Island), where they founded Portsmouth.

Upon the death of her husband, four years later, Mrs. Hutchinson and her party came to Flushing, Long Island, whence after a brief stay she repaired to Pelham Neck. This region was for a time

known as "Annes Hoeck," or Ann's Neck. The Hutchinson River perpetuates her name. Here they erected a cabin upon the rising ground of the famous "Split Rock."

A few months later, Throgg's Neck (named by the Indians *Quinnahung*), sometimes styled in old records "Frog's Point," was settled by John Throckmorton (or Throgmorton) and thirty-five Baptist families, who, like the Hutchinsons, had been driven from Rhode Island because of religious persecution. In granting



SPLIT ROCK, PELHAM BAY PARK

them a patent in October, 1643, the Dutch authorities in New Amsterdam referred to it as *Vriedelandt*, or "Land of peace."

In 1643 the Weckquaesgeek Indians, fleeing before a raid of their dreaded enemies, the Mohawks of the north, abandoned their village in Westchester County and came in a miserable condition to Pavonia on Manhattan Island. Director Kieft, perhaps seeing an opportunity of obtaining easy possession of the lands inhabited by the Indians, ordered that they be surprised at night and mercilessly massacred. This cruel act aroused the neighboring tribes to such implacable fury that they wildly set about to exterminate all who intruded upon their hunting grounds. Westchester was laid waste.

A party of Indians came to Mrs. Hutchinson on a friendly visit, as was their wont. After discoursing with her they asked that she tie up her dogs lest they bite. She did not suspect the Indians' guile and granted their request; whereupon they gave vent to the rancor against the whites burning in their hearts. They brutally butchered Mrs. Hutchinson and her family, sparing only her eight-year-old daughter Frances, whom they took captive. Another daughter, just as she was about to escape over a hedge, was seized by the hair and heartlessly put to death. In all, sixteen persons were murdered, while Throckmorton and his followers



MASSACRE OF ANNE HUTCHINSON COLONY

escaped on a vessel which had just then so opportunely arrived. The Indians then placed all the cattle into the houses and applied the torch to them.

Mrs. Hutchinson's old Puritan acquaintance took her tragic death as evidences of Divine wrath against the woman's heresies. One of them, remarking that outrages by the Indians were rare, says, "God's hand is the more apparently seen herein to pick out this woeful woman to make her an unheard-of heavy example of their cruelty above others."

Four years after the massacre, a treaty of peace was concluded between the Dutch and the Indians, one of the conditions of which was that Mrs. Hutchinson's daughter be surrendered and sent to her friends in Boston. Long association with the Indians had endeared them to her; she had forgotten her own language, and she

was loath to forsake them. After much pleading she was finally prevailed upon to leave them. She became reconciled, married John Cole in 1651, and left descendants.

In commemoration of Anne Hutchinson's massacre the Daughters of American Dames have erected a bronze tablet near the spot where the intrepid Colonists lost their lives, which bears this inscription:

Anne Hutchinson, banished from the Massachusetts colony
in 1638 because of her devotion to religious liberty.
This courageous woman sought freedom from persecution
in New Netherland.
Near this rock in 1643 she and her household were massacred
by Indians.

CHAPTER XV

THROGG'S NECK

"The Lexington of Westchester"—How American Patriots Repulsed the Enemy at Throgg's Neck—Colonel John Glover, the Hero of Pell's Point, Who Saved Washington from Disastrous Defeat—"Spy Oak," from Whose branches a Red-Coat was Hanged.



T the extreme end of Throgg's Neck is Fort Schuyler, one of "Uncle Sam's" fortifications on Long Island Sound. The fort was begun in 1833 and completed in 1856. It was equipped with a battery of twelve-inch mortars, as well as several disappearing guns. On the opposite shore is Fort Totten, on Willett's Point, the Torpedo and Submarine Training Station.

The fort has proved to be too old fashioned to be of further use, and reliance for attack and defence has been placed in the more modern fortifications at the eastern entrance of the Sound at Fisher's Island. In the summer of 1911 the garrison was withdrawn from Fort Schuyler, and the fort was placed in charge of a sergeant and a small body of men.

Near Cherry Point, on Throgg's Neck, was the palatial residence of Governor E. D. Morgan.

Almost every inch of ground hereabouts has its historic points. During the Revolution it was the hotbed of Tories and the center of many a bloody conflict.

Following the repulse of General Howe's formidable force at the battle of Harlem Heights on September 16th, 1776, Washington withdrew his men to the commanding hills on the upper end of Manhattan Island, where he believed that in the event of a renewal of hostilities he would be better equipped to defend his position with his small force.

While Washington was busy fortifying Fort Washington, Howe conceived the idea that by getting in the rear of the American army and cutting off their supplies, which were chiefly derived from the east, he would have them at his mercy and thus bring the rebellion to a summary end.

Detaching part of the troops from the main army, Howe sent them over to the east side of Harlem, where they were put aboard boats and transported to Throgg's Neck. Simultaneously with this movement a squadron of ships filled with another army were sent up the Hudson River, under cover of darkness, with instructions to cooperate with the Throgg's Neck division, and by a combined rear attack drive the rebels back to Manhattan.

To prevent Washington from discovering the ruse, Howe kept a large force in front of the American trenches. Theoretically, the *coup* Howe had planned was worthy of his genius, but, before it could be put into operation Washington had moved his force to White Plains.

Early in the morning of October 12, 1776, four thousand British troops under General Howe landed with artillery at Throgg's Neck, but, unfortunately for them, their approach had been observed by General Heath, who, quick to perceive the significance of this move lost no time in dispatching a courier with the intelligence to General Washington. An alarm was immediately sounded and all available troops were rushed to the scene in order to check the enemy's advance.

Throgg's Neck was separated from the mainland by a narrow creek and a marsh, and, at high tide, was surrounded by water. A bridge connecting with an old causeway had to be crossed to reach the mainland.

Before the enemy reached this spot the American patriots had ripped up the planking of the bridge and a company of Colonel Hand's picked Riflemen had posted themselves on the opposite side of the causeway and began to pour a hot fire into the advancing ranks. They were soon reinforced by Colonel Prescott, of Bunker Hill fame, with his regiment, and Lieutenant Bryant of the Artillery with a three-pounder.

Checked at this pass, the British moved toward the head of the creek; here, too, they found the Americans in possession of the ford. Again and again they attempted to cross, but the unerring aim of the American riflemen was so deadly and persistent that they finally abandoned the idea of crossing. This repulse was known as the "Lexington of Westchester." It took place at the bridge where today the trolley crosses Westchester Creek just east of Westchester Square.

When Washington arrived some hours later the British had

returned to the Neck, and, after throwing up earthworks, encamped. For six days Howe's Army remained inactive at Throgg's Neck. When he finally got his army in motion, the Americans had withdrawn to White Plains, a more strategic position. Howe's inactivity had lost him a golden opportunity.

On the 14th of October the Americans held a council of war at Kingsbridge, at the quarters of General Lee, who arrived that day from the South.

It was decided that it would be impracticable to blockade the Sound or even the North River. The only method of preventing the British from cutting off Washington's communication with the country was an immediate northern movement towards the strong grounds in the upper part of Westchester County. Fort Washington, however, in compliance with the wishes of the Continental Congress, was to be maintained as long as possible.

On the 18th the whole British army was in motion. Lord Howe re-embarked part of his troops in flatboats, crossed Eastchester Bay, and landed on Pell's Point (now Pelham Bay Park) at the north of the Hutchinson River. Here he was joined in a few hours by the main body, and proceeded thru the manor of Pelham, still with the intention of getting above Washington's Army. Washington, believing that Howe was planning an attack upon Morrisania, where the Americans had a strong outpost, ordered Heath and his troops to that position to watch the enemy; thus leaving the British free to capture and destroy the scattered American army. But in their march the British were waylaid and harassed from behind stone walls by the brigade under the command of Colonel John Glover.

This brigade was composed of the regiments of Colonels Shepard, Read and Baldwin, as well as his own Marblehead, Massachusetts, regiment which had played so important a part in skillfully manning and rowing the boats in the retreat from Long Island, and later when Washington took his army across the Delaware and surprised the Hessians at Trenton. Colonel Glover's regiment was composed almost wholly of fishermen, and was therefore styled the "Amphibious Regiment." They were hardy, adroit and weather-proof; fresh and full of spirit; and, as they marched briskly along the line with alert and cheery aspect, they inspired the other soldiers with enthusiasm.

The British made their landing under cover of darkness.

When Glover discovered them he immediately notified Lee at Valentine's Hill; but receiving neither orders nor support, he set about to check the British on his own account with his meager brigade. He stationed the various regiments under his command behind stone fences along either side of the road leading to City Island. He posted his own regiment on the Heights overlooking the Hutchinson River, under command of Captain Curtis.

As the British advance guard came up to the City Island Road, Glover met them with an advance guard of forty men. After an interchange of shots, the patriots, outnumbered by the enemy, retreated along the road. The British pursued them but were soon routed by Read's regiment which opened fire upon them from behind a stone fence. The enemy returned with a larger force, but were again repulsed by Read's men. Read now withdrew beyond Shepard's regiment on the opposite side of the road.

The British pursued the retiring regiment in solid columns, but were thrown into confusion by Shepard's men who poured several volleys upon the enemy from behind the stone fence. The Americans withdrew behind Baldwin's regiment. They kept up their sharp fire upon the British, but were finally compelled to retreat by the overwhelming numbers of the enemy. The Battle of Pell's Point kept up for practically all day, but the handful of Americans were no match for the British forces. The Americans lost only six killed and thirteen wounded; while the British loss was in the neighborhood of one thousand killed and wounded.

"After fighting all day without victuals or drink," writes Col. Glover, "we lay as a picquet all night, the heavens over us and the earth under us, which was all we had, after having left our baggage at the old encampment we left in the morning."

The next day they were forced to continue the retreat until they reached Mile Square, west of the Bronx River. Their hunger and fatigue were offset by the feeling that they had done a valuable service to their country by delaying Howe and enabling Washington to reach White Plains. Howe reached the coveted place at last but it was too late for his purpose of intercepting Washington in his march northward. The gallantry of Glover and his men saved the day.

Both Washington and General Lee issued public thanks to Col. Glover and the officers and soldiers who were with him in this skirmish, for their merit and good behavior.

Mile Square, Oct. 19, 1776.

Gen'l Lee returns his warmest thanks to Colonel Glover and the Brigade under his command, not only for their gallant behaviour yesterday, but for their prudent, cool, orderly and soldierly conduct in all respects. . . ."

Washington sent the following:

General Orders

Headquarters, Oct. 21, 1776.

The hurried situation of the General the last two days having prevented him from paying that attention to Colonel Glover and the officers and soldiers who were with him in the skirmish on Friday last, their merit and good behavior deserved, he flatters himself that his thanks tho delayed will nevertheless be acceptable to them as they are offered with great sincerity and cordiality.

On a gigantic boulder near the new bridge that spans the waters to City Island a fitting memorial was erected by the Bronx Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution. The tablet reads:

GLOVER'S ROCK

IN MEMORY OF THE 550 PATRIOTS
WHO, LED BY COL. JOHN GLOVER, HELD
GEN. HOWE'S ARMY IN CHECK AT THE
BATTLE OF PELL'S POINT

OCTOBER 18, 1776,

THUS AIDING WASHINGTON IN HIS
RETREAT TO WHITE PLAINS

FAME IS THE PERFUME OF HEROIC DEEDS

ERECTED BY BRONX CHAPTER OF MOUNT VERNON, N. Y.

DAUGHTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION

OCTOBER 18, 1901.

On Pelham Road, midway between Westchester and Pelham, stands a mammoth oak tree that has been known since the days of the Continental army as "Spy Oak," said to be the largest of its kind east of the Rockies.

It is related that from one of its lower branches soldiers of George Washington's forces hanged a British red-coat they had caught on a spying expedition, and even to this day it is averred that his spirit patrols the roadway near the scene of his ignominy.

ous death at frequent intervals, and that his spectral form, its haughty carriage made more impressive by its military garb of long coat and heavy cape, may be seen particularly on nights when the moon is full and unhidden.

Standing well back from Pelham Road, north of the "Spy



SPY OAK, PELHAM ROAD

Oak" stands the quaint Paul homestead, said to have been built during the early days of the Revolution.

Between Throgg's Neck and City Island are several islets, bared at low tide, upon one of which is a Government lighthouse. These are called the "Devil's Stepping Stones."

Among the families having large estates on Throgg's Neck are the Havemeyers, the Huntingtons, the Morrisises, the Browns, the Adees, the Costers, the Turnbolls, and the Jacksons. Upon the Huntington estate is a magnificent cedar of Lebanon, planted by

Philip Livingston, about 1790. William H. Harrison, the ninth President of the United States, once had a temporary residence on Throgg's Neck.



PAUL HOMESTEAD

CHAPTER XVI

CITY ISLAND AND EASTCHESTER

The Blacksmith Who Refused to Shoe a Horse on Sunday—Scenes That Figure in the Fight for Independence—President John Adams in The Bronx.



CITY ISLAND is a very delightful village, lying off Rodman's Neck, and comprises 230 acres. Until recently it was connected with the mainland with a wooden bridge, which originally spanned the Harlem River, and some of the timbers of which had been taken from the old frigate *North Carolina*. This antique bridge was replaced by the present steel structure, which cost \$200,000, erected in 1898, and opened to the public July 4th, 1901,

In the early days City Island was known as Minnewits, or Great Minnefords, Island, probably after Peter Minuits, the Dutch Governor and purchaser of Manhattan Island. It was a part of Pelham Manor, and was purchased from Thomas Pell by John Smith of Brooklyn. On June 19, 1761, the island came into the possession of Benjamin Palmer, who built the Free Bridge at Spuyten Duyvil.

In 1761 the inhabitants of the island launched a scheme to build a city which would surpass New York—whence the name City Island. Several ferries were established to ply between the mainland and the island in order to further this project. The plan was checked by the Revolution, but was revived in 1790. The island was cut up into 4,500 lots of one hundred by twenty-five feet, which were sold at ten pounds each. In 1818 and in 1819 Nicholas Haight, Joshua Hustace and George W. Horton owned nearly all of the island and Rodman's Neck.

City Island is said to have been the first place in America where oyster culture was commenced. The old wooden bridge was always crowded on Sunday afternoon with anglers who found fishing in the water below very fruitful. City Island is also noted as a boat-building resort, and a laying-up place for racing craft, particularly of cup defenders of international fame.

Many residents of Manhattan are attracted to City Island on Sundays and holidays by the facilities for bathing, rowing and fishing. Many city dwellers spend the summer on the island in tents, while numerous clubs have their summer camps here.

City Island is reached by train on the Suburban branch of the New York, New Haven, and Hartford Railroad to Bartow Station. Up to very recently there was an old fashioned bob-tailed



OLD CITY ISLAND BRIDGE

horsecar which took passengers from the railroad station to Marshall's Corners at the end of Rodman's Neck for one fare of five cents, and to the end of the island, for another. This was replaced in 1910 by an electric monorail, which has not proved very successful.

To the east of City Island lies Hart's Island, at one time owned by Oliver De Lancey, and later it passed into the possession of the Hights and Rodmans, then into the hands of John Hunter, and finally into the City of New York. To the north is High Island,

and nearby are several rocky islets, called Rat Island, the Chimney Sweeps, the Blauzes and Goose Island.

One of the landmarks of City Island is the Horton homestead, the oldest house on the island. Most of City Island was once comprised of the Horton Farm.

The "Macedonian Hotel" is another landmark which attracts wide attention. It is supposed to have been formed from part of the hulk of the English frigate *Macedonian*, which had been captured in the War of 1812 by Commodore Decatur.

The inscription reads: *This house is the remains of the English Frigate "Macedonian," captured on Sunday, October 25th, 1812, by the United States Frigate "United States" commanded by Capt. Stephen Decatur, U. S. N. The action was fought in Lat. 24° N., Long. 29° 30' W., that is about 600 miles N. W. of the Cape de Verde Islands off the W. coast of Africa and towed to Cowbay in 1874.*

Mr. Stephen Jenkins in his *Story of The Bronx* cites a statement from the *United States Naval Academy*, by Park Benjamin, to the effect that, while the house is not the remains of the original British *Macedonian*, it is the remains of a second ship of that name, launched at Gosport, Virginia, in 1836, rebuilt at Brooklyn in 1852, and broken up in 1874, at Cow Bay, Long Island.

The picturesque old town of Eastchester with its ancient shade trees and interesting old houses, some of which date back to Colonial days, is undeniably rich in historic memories. On the site of the old Joseph Morgan residence was once located a large Indian settlement. Evidences of Indian occupation are found to this day in the forms of arrow-heads, shell heaps and stone hatchets. The Siwanoy had a fort on the hill directly in back of the Fowler mansion. On this hill the early settlers erected in 1675, a "General Fort" for mutual protection. On the right of the road may be seen Odell's barns dating from Revolutionary days.

Eastchester was included in Pell's purchase of 1654. Pell granted, on June 24, 1664, to James Eustis, Philip Pinckney, John Tompkins, Moses Hoit, Samuel Drake, Andrew Ward, Walter Lancaster, Nathaniel Tompkins, and Samuel Ward, "to the number of ten families, to settle down at Hutchinson's, that is where the house stood at the meadows and uplands, to Hutchinson's River." These ten families had migrated hither from Fairfield, Connecticut. The settlement became known as the "Ten Farms," and later, East-

chester. In 1666 the settlers purchased more land from the Indians. Among the sachems who signed the deed was Annhooke,* the slayer of Mrs. Anne Hutchinson. On March 9th, 1667, Governor Nicolls granted the settlers a confirmatory patent.

The famous old St. Paul's Church has an interesting past. It was built in 1765 to replace one erected in 1699 which had been destroyed by fire. During the Revolution, St. Paul's was used by the British at various times as a stable and as a hospital. After the war it served as a Court of Justice, and Aaron Burr, who fought Alexander Hamilton in a duel, pleaded many cases here. The Church-yard contains some 6,000 bodies, the oldest head-stone being that of "M. V. D." who died February 15, 1704. Some of the prominent families interred there are—Pinckneys, Fowlers, Drakes, Hunts, Odells, Underhills, Valentines, Sherwoods and others as famous.

The lawn opposite St. Paul's was used as the Colonial village green and here also stood the first church. It is said that between the group of locust trees, still standing, were the village stocks where offenders were punished.

The Vincent-Halsey House on Columbia Avenue is another old landmark around which is woven many an interesting tale. The Vincents were the village blacksmiths, and, being devout Christians would under no circumstances shoe a horse on Sunday. Adherence to this principle caused the death of one of the blacksmiths, Gilbert Vincent. A French officer in the Continental army who had been despatched on some important business lost a shoe of his spirited mount as he was passing thru the village. The officer led the horse to the Vincents' smithery but he was refused the shoe on the ground that such labor on the Sabbath was a desecration. Impatient to get away, and angered at what he considered unpatriotic obstinacy and unfriendliness to the cause, the officer drew his sword and struck the pious blacksmith to the ground. This cold-blooded murder so incensed Elijah Vincent, the brother of the slain man, that he promptly obtained a commission in the British army and became the most vindictive and uncompromising enemy the patriots had in the whole territory. Nothing

* It was customary among the Indians for the chief of the tribe to assume the name of some noted victim of his prowess in order to appease the dead and to become endowed with the nobler qualities of the slain.

was considered safe from him and his associates, not even the old bell, the Bible and the prayer-book which had been presented to St. Paul's Church by Queen Anne. To safeguard these from the profaning hands of the marauding soldiery, which held nothing sacred, they were buried in the ground adjoining the edifice, where they remained until the close of the war. The Vincents moved



ST. PAUL'S CHURCH, EASTCHESTER

away when the British evacuated New York, and Col. W. S. Smith of the thirteenth Massachusetts Regiment, a distinguished officer of the Revolution and an aide of the staff of Washington, moved into the mansion.

Col. Smith was a son-in-law of John Adams, and had been secretary of the American legation at London when his father-in-law served there as the first minister accredited to the Court of St. James by the young Republic. Subsequently he was United States Marshal for New York, a member of Congress from this

city, from 1813 to 1816, President of the New York Order of the Cincinnati.

The details of the celebrated Miranda expedition, in which he and his son were involved and which caused a profound stir in the country at the time, it is believed, were hatched in the Halsey mansion while he was its tenant,—altho on this point there is some doubt among historians.

With the outbreak of yellow fever in Philadelphia, then the nation's capital, President Adams and his family accepted the invitation of Col. Smith and his wife, Abigail Adams, to make their home with them in the Bronx mansion. During this period the Halsey homestead, being the residence and office of the country's Chief Executive, was the center of the new Republic's official and social life. In the old library of the mansion, which was assigned to the President as an office, he dictated the policy of the Government and there indited a number of important papers. Believing that the fever which destroyed thousands in Philadelphia would not abate sufficiently to make it safe for him to venture there for the opening of Congress, he urged that the session be held in New York. It would be more convenient for him, he said, to keep in touch with its deliberations from the Halsey mansion than would be possible if the session convened in the City of Brotherly Love. The following is one of his letters to Secretary of State Pickering, directing him how to forward the mails to him at the mansion:

East Chester, 12th of October, 1797.

To T. Pickering, Sec. of State.

Dear Sir: I arrived here at Col. Smith's last night with my family and I shall make this house my home until we can go to Philadelphia with safety. . . . If you address your letters to me at East Chester and recommend them to the care of my son, Charles Adams, Esq., at New York, I shall get them without much loss of time, but if a mail could be made up for East Chester they might come sooner. I know not whether this can be done without appointing a postmaster at this place, and I know of no one to recommend. I shall divide my time between New York and East Chester till the meeting of Congress.

With great regards, etc.

JOHN ADAMS.

By the friends of the Adams family it was considered a singular coincidence that years after they had left the Halsey mansion the body of George Washington Adams, son of President

John Quincy Adams and grandson of President John Adams, should have drifted ashore on the Eastchester Creek, close to the old manse, following a drowning accident in 1829. In appreciation of the good offices of one of the wardens of St. Paul's Church who recovered the body, Mrs. John Quincy Adams, mother of the youth, presented a silver loving-cup to the church, which treasures it to this day as among its most precious heirlooms.

Of late years the Halsey mansion has been the subject of increasing patriotic interest to historians and students of Colonial



OLD REID'S MILL, EASTCHESTER

times, in corresponding proportion to the steady disappearance of those buildings that have Revolutionary associations.

Another notable landmark in Eastchester was the old Guion inn, a Revolutionary tavern erected in 1720 where Washington once stopped and mentioned in his diary that the roads were "uncommonly rough and stony." It was here that Governor George Clinton assembled the State Council after the evacuation of New York. Among the existing relics of the past in Eastchester are the old Crawford house, opposite St. Paul's Church, an ancient tavern of Revolutionary days; the old Groshon residence once the home of a Huguenot family, "Grosjean;" Old Point Comfort, a well-known

inn of early days, recently rebuilt; and the antique Reid homestead, at the foot of Mill Lane, Eastchester Creek, opposite the site of the old Reid's mill, which was erected in 1739, by Thomas Shute and Joseph Stanton, and which came into the possession of John Reid, a Scotchman.

Eastchester, tho still a rural community, is falling in line with the development of the other sections of the Borough. The Boston Post Road is being made into a State road; while the Boston and Westchester Railroad will help materially to bring about a rapid growth of the town. Crossing the Boston Post Road, is Rattlesnake Brook, which bears testimony to the abundance of reptiles in this region. The stream is dammed to the east of the road, forming Holler's Pond, from which ice is cut to supply the neighborhood. About a mile from the Boston Road there is a lane leading to the vast stretches of salt meadows of Eastchester Creek.

CHAPTER XVII

WEST FARMS

The Homes of Notable Men: *Foxhurst, Brightside, Sunnyside*—The Quaint Presbyterian Church at the Graves Where Heroes Lie Buried—The Draft Riots During the Civil War—"Wishing Rock," Where the Algonquin Braves Wooed the Fair Stockbridge Maids.



THE town of West Farms was formed from the town of Westchester, by an Act of Assembly May 13th, 1846. It includes the following villages: Fordham, Williamsbridge, Tremont, Fairmount, Belmont, Monterey, Mount Eden, Mount Hope, and Woodstock. Morrisania was originally a part of West Farms, but on December 7, 1855, it was formed into a separate township. In 1874, it was annexed to New York City. All the villages now form a part of the Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Wards.

Many quaint and interesting memories linger about West Farms of the old days. The old Hunt inn, better known as the "Fox Farm House," which stood on the west side of West Farms Road near One Hundred Sixty-seventh Street was until destroyed by fire on Easter Sunday, 1892, one of the oldest and most picturesque dwellings in West Farms, if not in the Borough. Many interesting relics were found in its walls. It was erected in 1666 and stood on the large tract of land owned by Edward Jessup and John Richardson, whose daughters married Thomas Hunt, Jr., and Gabriel Leggett, respectively.

During the American Revolution the old inn was the rendezvous for British officers. Colonel James De Lancey, commander of the Loyalists in Westchester, frequently invited his brother officers over from Queens County for a fox hunt. The chase being started at the junction of West Farms and Westchester turnpike and the locality became known as "Fox Corners."

Foxhurst was another relic of bygone days. This splendid old residence stood at the junction of West Farms Road and Westchester Avenue, and was erected seventy-two years ago by William

W. Fox, president of the first gas company in America, who also was one of the first Croton Water Commissioners appointed by Governor Macy.

On Westchester Avenue opposite Foxhurst Mansion, stood *Brightside*, the country seat of the late Colonel Hoe, the inventor of the "Hoe Lightning or Rotary Press." Richard March Hoe was born in New York, September 12, 1812. His father, Robert Hoe, came to New York from Lancashire, England, in 1803. A year or so later he settled in Westchester County and married Rachel,



OLD HUNT INN

daughter of Matthew Smith of North Salem, Westchester County, New York. With his brothers-in-law, Peter and Mathew Smith, he took up the manufacture of a hand printing press, and in 1833, became sole proprietor. A skilful mechanic, he constructed the original Hoe Press, and was, it is thought, the earliest American machinist to utilize steam as a motive power in his plant.

Upon the death of Robert Hoe, in 1833, his son, Richard March Hoe, at the age of twenty-one, became the senior partner of the firm. He devised numerous ingenious improvements in the presses and in 1837 he also patented a fine quality of steel saws, the production of which became part of their business. In 1847 he patented his lightning press, so called because of the rapidity of its

The Bronx Gas & Electric Company

Frisby and Walker Avenues

Tel. Westchester, 500

ELECTRICITY

FOR POWER USES—such as motors for manufacturing purposes or sewing machines, washing machines, etc.
FOR LIGHTING—using flame arcs, tungsten or carbon lamps.

GAS

FOR HEATING—using stoves, grills, chafing dishes, soldering irons and pressing household irons.

FOR COOKING PURPOSES—using special stoves for Hotel and Restaurant work as well as Domestic Stoves.

FOR HEATING WATER—in Automatic, Instantaneous or Tank Water-Heaters.

FOR ROOM HEATING—using gas-steam radiators, gas-logs, gas grates or portable heaters.

FOR SPECIAL INDUSTRIAL WORK, where heat, hot water or steam is required.

'Phone for our representative

Inquiries Solicited

Courteous Attention Given

Metropolitan Dye Works

WEIGLE & FUNKE

Cleaners and Dyers

OFFICES

114 West 39th Street
140 East 49th Street
771 Third Avenue
674 Madison Avenue
1500 Third Avenue
Bronx and 180th Sts.

Telephone Connections

First Class Work
Reasonable Prices
Prompt Delivery

OFFICES

352 Columbus Ave.
514 Amsterdam Ave.
2515 Broadway
2645 Broadway
45 East 125th Street
591 West 181st Street

Telephone Connections

Works at 180th Street and Bronx River
WEST FARMS, NEW YORK CITY

Telephone, 84 Tremont

H. GOOSSEN

DEALER IN

Fine Groceries



Teas, Coffees, Spices, Etc.

Fruits and Vegetables in Season



1809 Crotona Avenue

Telephone, 829 Tremont Near 175th Street



THE
**BEN
HAT**
473
Tremont
Ave.
BRONX

Telephone, 984 Tremont

H. ROLPH
Successor to ROLPH & ROLPH
**Real Estate, Insurance and
Mortgage Broker**

535 East Tremont Avenue NEW YORK
Cor. Third Avenue Bronx Borough

W. Edson Andrews, M.D.S., L.L.B.

University Grad. DENTAL OFFICE
Assistant

The Best in Modern Dentistry

20 Years Experience 463 Tremont Avenue
Tel. 416-W Tremont NEW YORK

What is the feeling one lacks when purchasing a Piano from an unknown firm? Is it not "confidence"? This feeling can be dispelled by calling on

WINTERROTH & CO.

PIANOS

105 EAST 14th ST.
NEW YORK CITY

Telephone, 1516 Stuyvesant

Subway Station at our door

New Pianos, \$200.00 and upwards

Easy payments and no interest. "Inspection invited." The wonder of the age!

THE "WINTERROTH PLAYER PIANO."
Call and let us demonstrate it.

BRONX

HARLEM

482 Tremont Ave.

14 West 125th St.

We make a specialty of
TUNING & REPAIRING

MANUFACTURER OF
FURNITURE SLIP COVERS

COUCHES & DINING
ROOM CHAIRS



S. SINGER
Upholsterer
FOR THE TRADE

DECORATING & PARLOR SUITS
MATTRESSES AND
CABINET MAKING

TELEPHONE.

820 TREMONT AVE.

TREMONT 5494

BRONX, N. Y.

Telephone, Tremont 984

ERNEST ROLPH

Attorney and Counselor at Law
535 East 177th Street
Cor. Third Avenue

Borough of the Bronx

NEW YORK

See **HARRY C. JACKSON**

If You Want to EXCHANGE, BUY or SELL

REAL ESTATE

1419 Wilkens Avenue

BRONX, N. Y.

Phone number 4022 Tremont

motions. Afterwards he invented the web perfecting press which prints on both sides and includes a complicated apparatus for cutting and folding the sheet. This machine revolutionized the art of newspaper printing and permits the issuing of a "special extra" within a few minutes after the occurrence of an extraordinary event. The present Hoe Octuple Press prints 464 miles of newspaper per hour. The factory on Grand Street, New York, is said to be the largest printing works in the world.

During the summer months Colonel Hoe repaired to his country seat in West Farms, where he owned an estate of sixteen acres, which he styled *Brightside*. Here he indulged his fancy for blooded cattle. The house, which was situated on the southeast corner of Westchester Turnpike and the road to Hunt's Point, now known as Southern Boulevard, was razed in 1908 to make room for suburban improvements. Col. Richard March Hoe died suddenly at Florence, Italy, June 7, 1886.

Peter Hoe, nephew of R. M. Hoe, who added various improvements to the original Hoe printing press, also had his home, *Sunnyside*, in The Bronx. It was situated across Hunt's Point Road and was one of the finest residences in the Borough.

At the junction of Boston Road and Minford Place is the site of the "Spy House." In this little building, it is said, lived an American spy, who played in the neighborhood a part similar to that of Cooper's spy at Mamaroneck.

At Bryant Avenue and One Hundred Eightieth Street is the West Farms Presbyterian Church, built in 1815. During the Colonial and the Revolutionary periods of the Presbyterians in the lower part of Westchester County had no church of their own. This was considered by the New York Presbytery a good field for missionary work. Between the years 1718 and 1721 William Tenant, a Presbyterian clergyman, attempted to evangelize this section. In 1814 the Rev. Isaac Lewis divided his time between West Farms and New Rochelle. In the following year a church edifice was erected; the congregation was fully organized by the election of officers on November 5, 1818. By means of a legacy left to the church by Charles Bathgate Beck, in 1903, a new stone edifice, known as the Beck Memorial Presbyterian Church, was erected directly opposite the old church building which was for a time given over to a colored congregation.

Adjoining the old church cemetery are interred many veterans

of the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery who enlisted for the Civil War from West Farms and Westchester village, and who gave their lives in the service of their country. The West Farms Cemetery, where the remains of these soldiers are buried, had fallen into neglect; the graves were sunken and the tombstones overgrown and almost obliterated. In 1907 a Mrs. Cunningham, the widow of a soldier, chanced to be passing by the graveyard at the time when the street was being widened, and noticed a number of bones



WEST FARMS CEMETERY

being thrown into a cart. She drew the attention of the citizens of the Borough to the neglect of these honored graves and the disgrace of the city in forgetting its heroes. A committee, headed by Captain Charles Baxter, at once set about to prevent further desecration of the graves and to restore the cemetery to a respectable condition. A board fence was erected by the Borough in July, 1908; while in October, 1909, a monument was erected by public subscription which was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies on May 29th, 1910. Three brass cannon, shell, and a flagpole were presented by the United States Government for decorative purposes. The most distinguished of those buried within

the cemetery is Captain William J. Rasberry, of Company C, Sixth New York Artillery who was killed during "Sheridan's Ride," at Cedar Creek, Va., October 19th, 1864, while leading his men up the hill. Within the plot are the remains of eleven soldiers, two of them of the War of 1812.

During the Civil War, many individual soldiers enlisted from all parts of the Borough, while the following companies were recruited almost wholly in the places given; Sixth Artillery, Company C, wholly, and Company K, partially, at West Farms; Company H, in Morrisiana; Fifth Infantry (Duryea's Zouaves), Company F, partially, in Fordham; Seventeenth Infantry, Company C, Morrisiana; One Hundred Seventy-sixth Infantry (Ironsides), Company G, in Pelham.

When the "Copperhead" element of the Borough read, on July 14th, 1863, of the riotous resistance to the draft on Manhattan Island the preceding day, they banded together, attacked the draft offices at Morrisania and West Farms and destroyed the lists. They then demolished the telegraph offices in Melrose and Williamsbridge and proceeded to tear up the rails of the Harlem and New Haven Railroads in order to prevent the arrival of troops and outside assistance. They did not, however, go the lengths of their rebellious neighbors. The mobs were soon quieted by the appeals of Supervisor Caldwell and Pierre C. Talman.

On the evening of the fifteenth a meeting was held in the town hall of Tremont where the crowd was addressed by John B. Haskin and Pierre C. Talman. The speakers managed the mass of excited and ignorant men with considerable diplomacy, first flattering them with the statement that they were right in their resistance to the draft, and then appealing to their sense of self-respect and order. The mob was finally pacified by the appointment of a committee "to wait on Moses G. Sheard, Esq., Federal Provost Marshal of the district, to insist that the draft be stopped till the State could decide whether it was constitutional." At the same time the news that troops had arrived in New York and discomfited the mobs there also acted as a tonic, and quiet and order were once more restored. *

The Isaac Varian homestead, also known as the Valentine House, at Van Cortlandt Avenue and Woodlawn Road, was erected

* Stephen Jenkins, *The Story of the Bronx*.

in 1776 while the old wing, now destroyed, dates back to 1770. An encounter occurred here in 1777 between the British and the Americans, the Continentals driving their foes out of this house and along the Boston Post Road to Fort Independence.

On the 17th of January, 1777, General Heath, in compliance with General Washington's orders, began an attack against Fort Independence. It was intended by this means, even if the fort was not taken, to cause the British to withdraw some of their troops from New Jersey and Rhode Island. General Lincoln advanced



ISAAC VARIAN HOMESTEAD

by the Albany Post Road to the heights above Van Cortlandt Park; General Scott came from Scarsdale to the vicinity of the Valentine house on the Boston Road, between Williamsbridge and Kingsbridge, while Generals Wooster and Parsons marched from New Rochelle over the Boston Road.

The three divisions arrived at the enemy's outpost just before sunrise. Lincoln captured the outpost in the front at "Upper Cortlandt's." Heath ordered the cannonade of the Valentine House, if the guard resisted, and he stationed two hundred and fifty men between the house and Fort Independence to prevent the guard from retreating to the fort. Two mounted British pickets were espied fleeing to give the alarm. One was captured, but the other

METAL CEILINGS

Side Walls
and
Wainscoting
for all
Buildings

—
No Job too
Small to
Receive Our
Most Careful
Attention
—

PHONE!



Average
Sized Ceiling
Finished in
one day with-
out Remov-
ing Plaster

No Dirt!

—
Private
Dwellings
a Specialty
—

WRITE!

JULIUS OEHRLEIN

Tel. 1517 Tremont

1840 Bathgate Ave.

BRONX

Appraiser, Estates Managed, Buying, Selling,
Renting and Collecting. Mortgage
Loans Negotiated.

Cornelius B. Parker

Real Estate and Insurance

2543 Walker Ave., Westchester, New York City
Commissioner of Deeds

Phone, Melrose 4139

Schutte-Smith Company

COMMERCIAL

Printers and Stationers

OFFICE OUTFITTERS

2583 - - 2585 - - 2587 Third Avenue
Near 139th Street

BRONX, N. Y.

The Waukrite Shoe Co.

SHOES and HOSIERY

426 Mott Ave. New York

Near 148th St.

A. W. KENT, Manager.

S. J. VENECEK & CO.

Makers of
Fine Cigars

3269 Third Avenue

Box Trade a Specialty



The Phenomenal Increase in Value of Real Estate in the Various Italian "Colonies," which in many Cases, During the last Fifteen Years, have become the Central Points of the City and the most sought after Sections of their Kind.

The first Italian "Colony" began to establish itself in the section below the well known "Five Points" and in the vicinity of Mulberry Street. At that time this was considered the worst spot in the City of New York, populated as it was by people of questionable character who maintained houses which were the retreats and resorts of thieves gangmen and malefactors of assorted variety. Only in this environment, where the dregs and social scum of the metropolis gathered, could a poor Italian rent an apartment. Being looked upon by owners of houses as a member of an undesirable element, a poor Italian could not rent anything better, and had to be content to pay his honest hard earned money for these nests of filth and indecency. Gradually, however, the sterling worth and thrift of the Italian procured the means to oust their shiftless, immoral neighbors through ownership of the houses, and in a few years the sons of Italy became absolute masters in that section. But for a long time after the predominance of the Italian was assured, in fact until several years ago, the Mulberry Street Italian quarter was generally admitted to be one of the poorest and filthiest sections of New York, a place where tuberculosis and infectious diseases ran rampant and caused thousands of unnecessary, premature deaths.

As opposed to the deplorable conditions of twenty years ago, we have today an outcome almost past belief. The City of New York is about to acquire the property around Mulberry Street and the "Five Points" and will erect many magnificent public buildings on the sites so obtained. The County of New York will have in the group of new structures an imposing new Supreme Court to replace the antiquated "Twedd" Court House now in City Hall Park. This Italian quarter, therefore, will become one of the most expensive and important sections of the City. So we have a condition where land which 30 years ago had a limited value of \$7,000 per lot, has today a market value of \$30,000 for the same parcel. It is further beyond any cavil or doubt that in a few years more, the fortunate owners of property adjacent to the new park and civic center will be able to dispose of their buildings for more than \$50,000 per city lot.

Many comparisons of this kind could be made, but it would require space that might burden the reader. Rather let us discuss the present opportunities, more important to the investor.

There is a section in the Borough of The Bronx called Fordham. It is situated east of Third Avenue near the Southern Boulevard and 183rd Street, Bronx Park and Pelham Avenue. To have a proper idea of the favorable increase which the Italian Colony affords to the City of New York, it is sufficient to consider that not more than five years ago, this locality was occupied by a limited group of modest Italian laborers who rented small tumble down houses, so as to be near their work on the streets which were being laid toward Bronx Park, Pelham Avenue and other places. At that period, land in this locality was sold from \$800 to \$1,000 per lot, and not even at these prices could purchasers be found. Now, however that is, during the last five years, the neighborhood is changing as if by magic, the small rustic houses vanish gradually, and are substituted by enormous buildings "Apartment Houses," which responsible Italian contractors erect in full conformity with modern hygienic systems and elegance; each apartment being furnished with the most luxurious comforts: steam heat, bath, electric light, telephone etc.

With all these favorable conditions, it is necessary to know that today the Italian who goes to live in The Bronx has reached a degree which leaves him nothing to wish for regarding his mode of living, neither has he any reason to envy the houses and apartments of the Americans in equal circumstances so much so, that as soon as a building is completed, it is taken at once by high-class Italian mechanics, who so much desire to breathe a little pure air, away from the deafening noises of commerce and far away from the odors of the numerous factories placed one on top of the other in the centre of the City.

The builders, encouraged in their work, are doing their utmost to acquire this small tract of land which four years ago was sold at an average of \$1,500 per lot, and which to-day sell at prices ranging upward from \$4,000. The topographical position of the locality, which does not permit of extensions, is a guarantee that in a short space of time it will double in value. Two sides of the property abut on Bronx Park, one other on Third Avenue and the fourth on 180th Street. A limited area of land in a locality always produces rapid increases in value.

A further contribution to the many conditions of Fordham which work for prosperity is the large commercial traffic of 187th Street. Here is located a commercial center, the advantages of which are readily accessible to the neighboring residents. Thus is afforded an opportunity to shop with great economy while living under the most favorable conditions, and with a splendid investment for the future.

escaped and alarmed the British outposts, who ran for the fort. They were fired upon by the Americans, and one of them was taken prisoner.

Built into the walls of the Church of the Holy Nativity, located at Woodlawn Road and Bainbridge Avenue, are three old tombstones, two of the Bussing family, dating 1753, and one of the Valentine family.

Opposite the Catholic church is the site of the old John Williams' house, erected about 1753, the home of the family after which Williamsbridge is named. The house was sold in 1903 to an Italian for firewood.

On White Plains Road near Williamsbridge Square stands a little Revolutionary house painted red, shot full of holes by British riflemen.

The Hustace house, Two Hundred Twenty-first Street, one of the oldest landmarks of the region, can be seen facing an old white house on a disused lane.

On the northeast corner of Two Hundred Twenty-second Street and White Plains Road, stands the Haven house. Within this old house are many relics of early Colonial days, which have been preserved with great care. Here may be seen the high back rush-bottomed chair in which General Washington sat while paying off his ragged army after the battle of Chatterton Heights, at White Plains in 1776. There is also a rocker belonging to George Clinton, the first governor of the State of New York; also a mahogany bedstead on which Commodore Perry died.

Mrs. Martha Clinton Havens was the adopted daughter of General James Clinton of Newburgh, the brother of Governor Clinton. It is said that the piano now in Washington's headquarters at Newburgh, belonged to Mrs. Havens. The brass cannon on the lawn was taken from the British by General Harrison at the battle of Tippecanoe, in 1814.

On the corner of Two Hundred Twenty-eighth Street stood the shingled house, torn down in 1885, which was used for a time by Washington as headquarters.

The Chateaufort residence, on the south side of Two Hundred Thirty-first Street, west of White Plains Road was built about 1853 and was the refuge of the widow and four children of the Marquis de Chateaufort, former governor of Touraine, who fled from France to escape espionage.

West of Webster Avenue and almost opposite the Union Railway car barns on the old Hyatt farm, stands an unpretentious one-and-a-half-story building that played an important part in the early days of the Revolution, and in which Washington when hard pressed and in danger of Lord Howe's and General Von Knyphausen's advance from Pell's Point, thought it prudent to store some of his cannon so that he could make quicker progress in his retreat to White Plains. The house is known today as "Washington's Gun House," while the adjoining settlement was called Washingtonville.



WASHINGTON'S GUN HOUSE

When the land hereabouts was still the uninvasion country of the Indians, the copper-skinned maidens of the Stockbridge braves of the Algonquins, who lived in a neighboring village, selected as a trysting place an immense rock under a group of willow trees on the bank of the Bronx River. It is said that at this beautiful spot one of the fairest daughters of the Stockbridge tribe was wooed by the son of an Algonquin chieftain and that when he carried her off as his bride the boulder was named the "Wishing Rock." After the white men had driven the Indians from this region the legend of the rock remained, and until a half century ago it was still a rendezvous for lovers. The section is now known as Wakefield.

The Penfield homestead, which stood, until it was almost de-

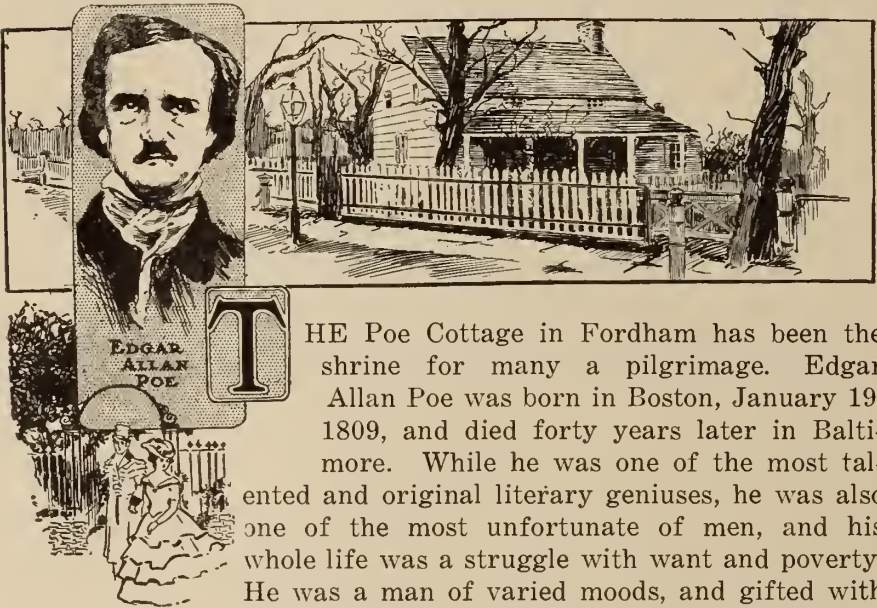
stroyed by fire on the morning of May 13th, 1912, at Demilt Avenue and Two Hundred Forty-second Street, east of White Plains Road, was erected over a century ago. It was formerly occupied by the Pauldings, the De Milts and the Penfields. Within its old Colonial walls Justices Marshall and Jay, as well as Aaron Burr, and Captains Ayres and Paulding of the Continental troops, were sheltered under its roof, and their names were cut in the small old fashioned panes of glass with which the windows were decorated.

At Demilt Avenue once stood the Thirteen Trees planted in the early days by a relative of the Paulding who helped to capture Major Andre, the British spy. They have all yielded to the onward march of progress; the last one, a black walnut, measuring three feet eight inches at the butt, having been cut down a few years ago.

CHAPTER XVIII

FORDHAM MANOR

Edgar Allan Poe and His Cottage at Fordham, Where He Won a Niche in the Hall of Fame That He had Not Dreamed of—Frederick Philipse Whose Ships Brought Fortunes to These Shores.



THE Poe Cottage in Fordham has been the shrine for many a pilgrimage. Edgar Allan Poe was born in Boston, January 19, 1809, and died forty years later in Baltimore. While he was one of the most talented and original literary geniuses, he was also one of the most unfortunate of men, and his whole life was a struggle with want and poverty. He was a man of varied moods, and gifted with an extraordinary imagination. His writings have been reproduced in many languages, yet his work met with poor compensation. For "The Raven," which has been read and recited wherever the English language is spoken, he received the sum of ten dollars. This justly celebrated poem was written at the old Brennan House on Riverside Drive, near West Eighty-eighth Street, Manhattan.

It was in the little cottage at Fordham, where he lived from 1845 to 1849, that he produced some of his literary gems, and

where he spent some of his most gloomy hours. It was there, also, that he lost his wife, Virginia, whom he had married when she was barely thirteen years old. Poe's devotion to his child-wife was one of the most beautiful features of his life, and many of his famous poetic productions were inspired by her. She was but twenty-five when she died.

It was in this cottage, too, that Poe poured forth his amatory effusions to Mrs. Sarah Helen Whitman, the Rhode Island poetess, sixteen years his senior. These passionate love epistles were written two years after the death of his wife, Virginia, and within a few months of his own death, and they culminated in a promise of marriage. The engagement was broken off on the eve of marriage by the interference of friends.

The following extracts from Poe's letters to his betrothed indicate his warmth of affection.

"Fordham, Sunday night, Oct. 1, 1848.

I have pressed your letter again and again to my lips, sweetest Helen—bathing it in tears of joy, or of divine despair! . . ."

"The mere thought that your dear fingers would press—your sweet eyes dwell upon characters which had welled out upon the paper from the depths of so devout a love—filled my soul with a rapture which seemed then all-sufficient for my human nature. . . ."

"If ever, then, I dared to picture for myself a richer happiness, it was always connected with your image in Heaven.

"As you entered the room . . . I felt . . . the existence of spiritual influences . . . I saw that you were Helen—my Helen—the Helen of a thousand dreams—she whose visionary lips had so often lingered upon my own in the divine trance of passion—she whom the great Giver of all Good pre-ordained to be mine—mine only—if not now, alas! then at least hereafter and forever in the heavens. . . . Your hand rested in mine and my whole soul shook with a tremulous ecstasy. . . ."

"You are aware, sweet Helen, that on my part there are insuperable reasons forbidding me to urge upon you my love. Were I not poor—had not my late errors and excesses justly lowered me in the esteem of the good—were I wealthy, or could I offer you worldly honors—ah, then—then—how proud would I be to persevere—to sue—to plead—to pray—to beseech you for your love—in the deepest humility—at you feet—at you feet, Helen, and with floods of passionate tears! . . ."

"October 18, 1848.

" . . . You do not love me, or you would have felt too thoro a sympathy with the sensitiveness of my nature, to have so wounded me as you have done with this terrible passage of your letter: 'How often have I heard men and even women say of you—"He has great intellectual power, but no principle, no moral sense."' Is it possible that such expressions as these could have been repeated to me—to me—by one whom I loved—ah, whom I love—at whose feet I knelt—I still kneel—in deeper worship than ever man offered to God?—And you proceed to ask me why such opinions exist. . . ."

"Friday the 24th.

"You allude to your having been 'tortured by reports which have since been explained to your entire satisfaction.' On this point my mind is fully made up. I will rest neither by night nor by day until I bring those who have slandered me into the light of day—until I expose them and their motives to the public eye. I have the means and I will ruthlessly employ them. . . ."

The following brief note of joyous assurance from Poe to Mrs. Clemm, heightens the tragedy:

"My Own Dear Mother: We shall be married on Monday, and will be at Fordham on Tuesday, in the first train."

Poe's life was brimful of sorrow. His grandfather, General David Poe, served with credit in the Revolutionary War, and was known to Washington and to Lafayette. His father was intended for the bar; but against the wishes of his family, he married an English actress, Mrs. Elizabeth Hopkins, the daughter of the once celebrated actress, Mrs. Arnold, and joined her on the stage. Edgar was but two years of age when both parents died in Richmond within a few weeks of each other, and the orphan was adopted by John Allan, a wealthy Richmond merchant, from whom he received his middle name. Here he was treated like one of the family, and the coddling and over-indulgence accorded him is responsible for his being a "spoilt child" thruout his life.

Poe was given excellent educational opportunities by his foster-father. In 1815 he was taken on a tour thru England and Scotland and placed in the Manor House School, Stoke Newington, about four miles from London. When he returned to Richmond six years later, he was placed in the English and Classical School of Joseph H. Clarke, where he was prepared for college. At the

age of seventeen he entered the University of Virginia, where he excelled in the languages and in athletics. He took high honors in Latin and French. But he fell into heavy gambling debts, and at the end of the first year Mr. Allan withdrew him from college and put him to work in his counting house.

Poe determined to make his own fortune, and he ran away to Boston where he soon issued his first book, *Tamerlane and other Poems*. Poor and friendless, he now enlisted in the army. He must have been an efficient soldier, for he was promoted to sergeant-general. Thru the influence of Mr. Allan, he was allowed to enter West Point; but not being able to stay long under restraint, he deliberately gave such ground for offence that he was court-martialled and dismissed.

He now turned to literature for a livelihood. By winning a prize of \$100 for a short story, he gained the admiration of John Kennedy, the novelist, who rescued him from poverty by securing for him magazine hack work. He brought about an enormous increase in subscription for every periodical with which he was connected, but his excesses kept him in the throes of poverty and wretchedness.

At this time he was living with his aunt, Mrs. Clemm, and her daughter, Virginia, in Baltimore, but he soon moved to Richmond, where he married his young cousin in 1835.

His indulgence in opium and intoxicants increased, and he was often plunged into dire penury. In 1838, he removed to New York, but he met with little success, and he had to keep up an incessant struggle to keep the wolf from the door. In 1841 his wife ruptured a blood vessel, and the next six years were full of misery and agony. For the sake of his wife's rapidly failing health, he removed, in the summer of 1845, to "the Little Dutch Cottage in Fordham."

Poe's devotion to his wife was steadfast. There is a tender letter dated June 12th, 1846, addressed to "My Dear Heart—My Dear Virginia." "Keep up your heart," he wrote, "in all hopefulness, and trust yet a little longer. On my last great disappointment I should have lost courage *but for you*—my little darling wife. You are my *greatest* and *only* stimulus now, to battle with this uncongenial, unsatisfactory and ungrateful life."

In 1848 Poe became betrothed to Mrs. Whitman, but the engagement was broken off on the eve of the wedding. In June,

1849, he revisited Richmond and became engaged to Mrs. Shelton. On September 18th, 1849, he wrote from Richmond to Mrs. Clemm: "*If possible* I will be married before I start, but there is no telling. . . . I hope that our troubles are nearly over. . . . The papers are praising me nearly to death." But Poe was doomed never to remarry. In October, while on the way to



FORDHAM DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH

Fordham, he stopped off at Baltimore, where he was found lying in the street unconscious. He died later in the City Hospital and was interred in the burial ground of Westminster Church near the grave of his grandfather. His wife's body, which had been buried in the cemetery of the old Dutch Reformed Church at Fordham, was removed in 1878 and laid beside that of her devoted husband.

N. P. Willis, an intimate friend of Poe, describes him thus:

"He was at all times a dreamer—dwelling in ideal realms—in Heaven or Hell—peopled with the creatures and the accidents of his brain. He walked in the streets, in madness or melancholy, with lips moving in indistinct curses, or with eyes upturned in passionate prayer (never for himself, for he felt or professed to feel that he was already damned), but for their happiness who at the moment were objects of his idolatry or with his glances introverted to a heart gnawed with anguish and with a face shrouded in gloom, he would brave the wildest storms, and all night with drenched garments and arms beating the winds and rains would speak as if the spirits that at such times only could be evoked by him from the Aidenn, close by whose portals his disturbed soul sought to forget the ills to which he might never see but in fitful glimpses, as its gates opened to receive the less fiery and more happy natures whose destiny to sin did not inspire the doom of death.

"He seemed, except when some fitful pursuit subjugated his will and engrossed his faculties, always to bear the memory of some controlling sorrow. The remarkable poem of 'The Raven' was probably a reflection and an echo of his own history. He was that bird's—unhappy master, whom unmerciful Disaster followed fast and followed faster, till his songs one burden bore—'Till the dirges of his Hope that melancholy burden bore of 'Never—never more'!"

Whatever faults or failings Poe may have had when he was alive, he stands today as a worthy American poet and prose writer. The fact that his name has been carved with other prominent Americans in the "Hall of Fame" is sufficient proof of the respect and admiration in which he is held by the American public.

The Philipse manor-house at Yonkers, located close to the boundary, deserves our attention, for the Philipseburgh Manor was included within the Borough until June 1, 1872, when the City of Yonkers was incorporated. Tradition says that it was here that George Washington courted the beautiful Mary Philipse when he was the guest of Colonel Robinson while on his horseback journey from Virginia to Boston, twenty years before he became the great leader of the Revolution.

It is not known whether Washington was simply backward in asking for her hand or whether he was actually rejected. At any rate, Colonel Roger Morris was the successful suitor, and shortly

afterward the fashion, the rank, the beauty and the scholarship of Yonkers were assembled at the manor-hall to celebrate the nuptials. Morris had been a fellow-soldier with Washington on the field of Monongabala, where Braddock fell, in the summer of 1755. He built, shortly after his marriage, the fine mansion at One Hundred Sixtieth Street and Edgecombe Avenue, which was the residence, until her death in 1865, of Madame Jumel, the widow of Aaron Burr. Morris remained loyal to the crown, and when Washington encamped with his army upon Harlem Heights in the fall of 1776, he fled for safety, and Washington, for a time, made this mansion his headquarters.

The Philipse manor-house was erected in 1682, by Frederick Philipse, a wealthy shipowner, who had fought his way from obscurity to power and wealth, having been a poor carpenter lad when he landed upon these shores from Holland. He abandoned carpentering and engaged in the fur business. Fortune smiled upon him when he married Margaret Hardenbroeck, the widow of a rival fur-trader, Pietrus Rudolphus De Vries. She not only was a great help-mate, but she established him as a man of wealth and influence.

Frederick Philipse secured to himself, by purchase from the Indians and grants from the Dutch government, all the land from Spuyten Duyvil Creek and the Harlem River on the south to the Croton River on the north, and between The Bronx and the Hudson River on the east and west. In 1693 this vast estate was formally erected by royal charter into a manor under the title of Philipseborough and Philipse was invested with all the privileges of a lord. It embraced the site of the present city of Yonkers in the very heart of which may be seen the pioneer manor house erected in 1682. In this pretentious manor-hall the courtly aristocracy of the province were wont to meet in gay and joyous throng. There still swings in the center of the southern front a dark, massive door which was manufactured in Holland in 1681 and imported by Mrs. Philipse. This old manor-house has had an eventful history. It was occupied by the Philipse family until 1776, when the "Third Lord of the Manor" fled to England and the property was confiscated by the Americans in 1779.

Frederick Philipse, the third and last lord of the manor, was a graduate of King's College, and was a scholarly gentleman with literary tastes. His wife was a devotee of fashion. It is said that it was her pride to appear on the roads of Westchester, skilfully

reining four jet-black steeds with her own hands. She was killed by a fall from her carriage shortly before the war. Frederick Philipse tried to maintain a strict neutrality during the war in order to protect his property; but he failed, for he was a loyalist at heart. Suspected of favoring the British, he was compelled to fly for safety after the battle of White Plains. Washington and his generals spent several nights under the terraced roof of the manor-hall. It is said that Washington occupied the southwestern chamber. It is an immense place and has an old fashioned fireplace with jambs about three feet deep, and faced in blue and white tile bearing scriptural illustrations and appropriate references. The chimney—now over two hundred years old—is of peculiarly quaint construction, and has a secret passageway from this apartment to some underground retreat. The bricks of which it was built were imported from Holland. Until a few years ago it was used by the municipal authorities of Yonkers for its City Hall.

That Philipse was the best-housed man in the colony is apparent, for on every side is evidence of the luxury enjoyed by him and those coming after him. The old house contains many interesting relics of former days. The "Wishing Seat" near the open fireplace has been well patronized as is evidenced by its hollow bottom. In the council room there is a bust of Washington; also an antique chair, said to have been used by him when he had his headquarters there.

Yonkers is a very old Dutch town, and began its existence in the days of New Amsterdam, as the Colony of Colen Donck, being the property of Adrien Van Der Donck, who in 1646, obtained title to a tract of land extending sixteen miles along the Hudson River, north of Spuyten Duyvil and thence east to the Bronx River. This tract included what is now the city of Yonkers, and the entire southwestern part of Westchester County.

CHAPTER XIX

HISTORIC KINGSBRIDGE

Fort Independence and Other Old Fortifications—Story of General Richard Montgomery, the Hero of Quebec.



GENERAL RICHARD
MONTGOMERY

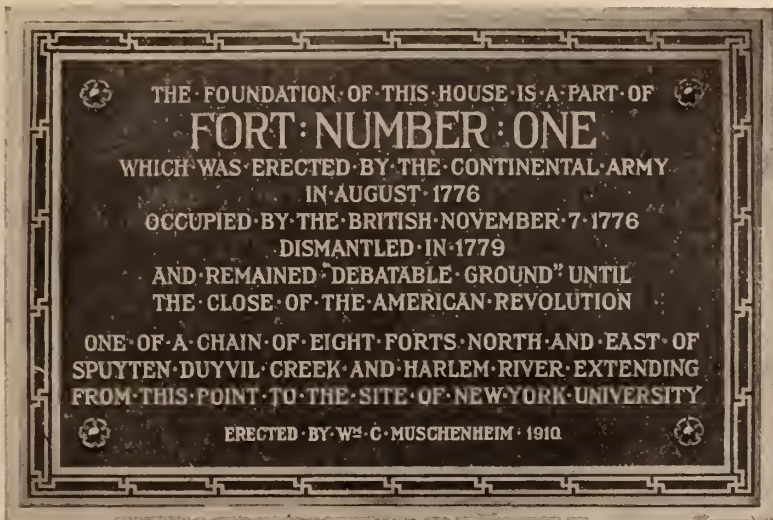
AT the unveiling of a bronze tablet, marking the site of Fort Number One, by the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society upon the east side of the handsome residence of Mr. William C. Muschenheim at Spuyten Duyvil on November 5, 1910, Lieutenant Stephen Jenkins, author of *The Story of The Bronx*, who delivered the historical address at the exercises, spoke without exaggeration when he said: "With the possible exception of the Mohawk Valley, the Tyron

County of Colonial days and the Lake Champlain region, there is no section in New York State which possesses such romantic, legendary and historic interest as the County of Westchester, particularly the Kingsbridge section. One can not help feeling a thrill as one travels over this historic ground. Wherever one goes or wherever one looks, he finds something of historic interest."

The Kingsbridge section was a bone of contention during the early part of the Revolutionary War. When the question of taking measures for the defence of the Colonies was proposed in the Continental Congress, a discussion arose that was long and earnest, for many members yet hoped for reconciliation. On the very day that a British reinforcement at Boston with Howe, Clinton, and Burgoyne entered that harbor, Duane, of New York moved, in the Committee of the Whole, the opening of a negotiation, in order to accommodate the unhappy disputes existing between Great Britain and the Colonies, and that this be made a part of the petition to the King. But more determined spirits prevailed, and a compromise was reached on the 25th of May, 1775, when directions were sent to the Provincial Congress at New York to preserve the communications between the City of

New York and the country by fortifying posts at or near Kingsbridge.

The Provincial Congress at New York appointed a committee consisting of Captain Richard Montgomery, Henry Glenn, Robert Yates and Colonels James Van Cortlandt and James Holmes (these last two of Westchester County, both of whom later became loyalists) "to view the ground at or near Kingsbridge, and report to this Congress whether the ground near Kingsbridge will admit of making a fortification there, that will be tenable."



BRONZE TABLET, FORT NUMBER ONE

The committee reported June 3d, 1775, and recommended that a post of three hundred men be established on Marble Hill, near Hyatt's tavern, Manhattan, and selected sites on Tetard's Hill to the east on Tippet's Hill to the west of the bridge for the establishment of redoubts to be built by the troops. About two hundred and fifty cannon of all shapes, sizes and material were dragged from the city to Kingsbridge, Williamsbridge and Fordham Manor.

In every circle apprehension was felt lest Kingsbridge should fall into the hands of the British and communication with the rest of the country be cut off. Early in June, 1776, Washington himself, after driving Howe out of Boston, came over to Kingsbridge. He

carefully inspected the neighborhood, and selecting seven suitable sites for redoubts, promptly gave orders to commence the work of erecting fortifications. Two of these redoubts—the Cock Hill Fort overlooking the mouth of Spuyten Duyvil Creek, and a fort on Marble Hill, afterwards called by the British, Fort Prince Charles—were on the island of Manhattan; the remaining five were in the Borough.

The location of the chain of fortresses overlooking the valley of Kingsbridge which have been designated by numerical names by the British who captured them in October, 1776, is as follows:

Number One forms the foundation of Mr. W. C. Muschenheim's house on Spuyten Duyvil Hill, west of the junction of Sydney Street and Independence Avenue. It was a square stone redoubt so built as to command the Hudson and Spuyten Duyvil Creek.

Number Two was the American Fort Swartout, named in honor of Colonel Abraham Swartout, whose regiment built it, as well as a small battery at the mouth of the creek near the site of the Spuyten Duyvil station of the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad. This battery was to prevent the enemy from entering the creek in boats. It was a small circular redoubt on the crown of Tippet's Hill northeast of the intersection of Sydney and Troy Streets. The walls still remain.

Number Three, a small stone redoubt, was located on the crest of Spuyten Duyvil Hill and commanded the junction of the Spuyten Duyvil road and the present Riverdale Avenue, as well as the extreme northerly end of Manhattan Island opposite the fort on Marble Hill, called Fort Prince Charles. The site of Fort Number Three is occupied by the Warren Sage house.

Number Four, the American Fort Independence, was the largest and perhaps the most important of all. It was situated on the farm of Captain Richard Montgomery, on the eastern side of the valley formed by Tetard's Hill on the east and Tippet's Hill on the west, and it commanded the Boston and Albany roads which were on either side of it. It was built of bastioned earthwork by the Pennsylvania Line, assisted by the militia, under the direction of Colonel Rufus Putnam who had constructed Fort Washington. On October 28, 1776, upon the approach of the Hessians under General Knyphausen, Colonel Lasher, the American commander, destroyed the barracks and

abandoned the fort, leaving behind the cannon and three hundred stand of arms. The British held the fort until September, 1779, when their troops were withdrawn to the south. The site of Fort Independence is now occupied by the residence of the late William O. Giles, Esq., on Giles Place near Fort Independence Street; when the cellar was dug there were unearthed eleven cannon, several cannon balls, calthorns and other military relics.

Number Five, lately restored and marked by a flag-pole, was a square redoubt of about seventy feet, north of the Claflin stables, of the old Tetard farm, and commanded the Farmer's Bridge. It was occupied by the British from 1777 to September 18, 1779. Its remains can be seen east of Sedgwick Avenue at the southwest corner of the Jerome Park reservoir. When the excavations for the reservoir were begun, there were unearthed cannon-balls, bayonets, swords, buttons and other relics, including several skeletons. In the summer of 1910, Messrs. Reginald P. Bolton, Edward Hagaman Hall, and W. L. Calver excavated the ground within the old redoubt and found the remains of brick fire places and regimental buttons of privates of the 13th Pennsylvania regiment and of the following British infantry regiments: 4th, 10th, 17th, 26th, 28th, 44th, 52d, 54th, 57th, 64th and 71st Highlanders, and also an officer's button of the 17th British.

Number Six, also called by the British the "King's Battery," was situated a short distance west of the present road to Highbridge, on the grounds of the Bailey estate on Fordham Heights, adjoining the Kingsbridge Road, now occupied by the Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum. The remains of the fort were about 380 feet northeast of the Bailey mansion. In excavating for the foundations of the Asylum buildings, it was necessary to destroy the old redoubt. Several relics of the British occupation were unearthed, among them some coins bearing the imprint of George II., the oldest yet found within the Borough.

Number Seven, no trace of which remains, stood on the Oswald Cammann estate at Cammann Place and Fordham Road.

Number Eight, which was located on Fordham Heights on the grounds of the present New York University, commanded the Harlem River, the American outwork on Laurel Hill (Fort George), the Kingsbridge Road from Harlem, and the northern outworks of Fort Washington at Inwood, afterwards called Fort Tryon. It was maintained by the British about three years longer than the

other posts, and it served to protect Colonel De Lancey's cantonment from the American attacks. It also guarded the pontoon bridge over the Harlem River and served as an alarm post to the garrisons at the northern end of Manhattan. But the Americans did not heed the presence of the fort, and made many raids on De Lancey's corps. When the Hessians arrived in Kingsbridge in November, 1776, work was begun upon the redoubt, and by the fifteenth of the month it was ready for use. The following day an attack upon Fort Washington was begun by Fort Number Eight, which resulted in the fall of the former. The British now strengthened Number Eight and maintained it thruout the war. Health writes in his *Memoirs*: "On the 20th of October, 1782, the enemy were demolishing their works at Number Eight, Morrisania." In 1857 the late Justus H. Schwab built his residence on the site of the old redoubt. When the old fort was dug up many relics were unearthed and carefully preserved. Among these were cannonballs, grape-shot, English coins, uniform buttons, bridle ornaments, pike tips, and military paraphernalia. The buttons indicate that the fort was occupied by the following British regiments, or detachments of them: 8th, 17th, 33d (Lord Cornwallis), 37th (English Muskateers), 38th, 45th, 74th, and 76th (Scotch). The Schwab mansion, as well as the entire Schwab estate was acquired in 1907 by the New York University.

In October, 1776, after the Battle of Pell's Point the American troops were withdrawn from Kingsbridge and the forts fell into the hands of the British. In 1779, the scene of hostilities was shifted to the south, and many of the British troops were withdrawn. By the middle of September of that year all the redoubts, with the exception of Number Eight, which was maintained till the end of the war as a base for operations of De Lancey's corps, were demolished, and the guns and stores removed to Manhattan. None of these redoubts was occupied by either side again, except Fort Independence, which was occupied for a few days by General Lincoln and the Marquis de Chastellux during the grand reconnaissance of the allied armies in the summer of 1781, but it was not restored or fortified.

Interwoven with the Kingsbridge section of The Bronx is the story of General Richard Montgomery, who had a farm here, and who upon his death, was lauded both in the Continental Congress and in the British Parliament.

Richard Montgomery was born in Ireland December 2, 1736. He entered the English army at the age of eighteen, and distinguished himself under Wolfe in his brilliant conquests in the French wars. He fought with the colonists in five important campaigns, and for valiant services he was promoted to the rank of captain.

He returned to England, but his claims for advancement being neglected, he sold his commission in 1772, and the following year he repaired to this country. He purchased a farm of sixty-seven acres at Kingsbridge, where he soon after won the hand of Janet, daughter of Judge Robert R. Livingstone. In May, 1775, he reluctantly yielded up his domestic happiness and consented to act as delegate to the first Provincial Congress in New York City; and in June of the same year the Continental Congress made him a brigadier-general in the Continental Army, the second on the list of eight, and the only one not from New England.

It was discovered that Carleton, the British Governor of Canada was enlisting the French peasantry in an expedition to recover Ticonderoga. The Continental Congress therefore decided to occupy that province as an act of self-defense. The command of the enterprise was assigned to General Schuyler, with Montgomery second in command.

Montgomery was regarded with pride and affection as, bidding farewell to his lovely home and recently wedded joys, he turned his face to the uninviting northern frontiers. His young wife, who accompanied him to Saratoga, little thought that she was kissing good-bye for the last time this princely "soldier,"—as she was fond of calling him.

Thru the illness of the superior officer, the entire command devolved upon Montgomery. With a force of 1,000 men he captured the fort at Chamblee and the post of St. John on November 3, took Montreal on the 13th, and pushed on to Quebec.

Montgomery's letters display his noble enthusiasm, his contempt for cowardice and his self-sacrificing patriotism. "The other day," he wrote to his wife, November 24, 1775, "General Prescott was so obliging as to surrender himself and fourteen or fifteen land officers, with above one hundred men, besides sea officers and sailors, prisoners of war. I blush for His Majesty's troops! Such an instance of base poltroonery I have never met with! And all because we had a half a dozen cannon on the bank

of the river to annoy him in his retreat. The Governor (Carleton) escaped—more's the pity! Prescott, nevertheless, is a prize."

It was on the 3d of December that Montgomery made a junction with Benedict Arnold, and soon decided to carry Quebec by storm. Arnold with rare boldness and persistence had conducted a detachment of Washington's army thru a tractless wilderness of nearly three hundred miles. Their provisions had fallen short towards the last so that it is said some of the men had eaten their dogs, cartouch-boxes, breeches and shoes. They had lost half their number.

Montgomery, who had been made a major-general on December 9, found it necessary to storm Quebec at once. He was unprovided with means for a prolonged siege; the Canadian winter was drawing on with all its rigor; the army was being reduced by sickness; the term for which part of the troops had enlisted would expire with the year, and they already talked of returning home. Whatever was to be done would have to be concentrated within the month of December.

"Till Quebec is taken Canada is unconquered," he wrote to Congress. To his wife he wrote: "They are a good deal alarmed in town (Quebec) and with some reason . . . I wish it were well over, with all my heart, and sigh for home like a New-Englander."

The attack was made at 2 o'clock in the morning of the 31st of December during a heavy snow-storm, Montgomery himself leading his men and rallying them on. "Forward, men of New York!" he cried, "you will not fear to follow where your general leads." They passed the first barrier, and Montgomery paused for a moment to cheer his troops: "Push on, my brave boys. Quebec is ours!" Suddenly he was laid low with his two aides by the first and only discharge of the British artillery. His soldiers, discouraged by the loss of their leader, retreated in great confusion.

His death was regarded as a great public calamity and foes and friends alike paid tribute to his valor. The governor, the lieutenant-governor of Quebec, and all the principal officers of the garrison, buried him with the honors of war. At the news of his death "the City of Philadelphia was in tears; every person seemed to have lost his nearest friend." Congress proclaimed for him "their grateful remembrance, respect and high veneration; and desiring to transmit a truly worthy example of patriotism, conduct, boldness of enterprise insuperable perseverance, and contempt of danger

and death," they reared a marble tablet in front of St. Paul's Church, Broadway and Vesey Streets, New York City, which had been procured by Franklin in France. In the British Parliament, Barre wept profusely when he heard of Montgomery's death. Burke eulogized him as the hero, who in one campaign, conquered two-thirds of Canada. To which Lord North replied: "I can not join in lamenting the death of Montgomery as a public loss. Curse on his virtues! He was brave, able, humane, generous; but still he was only a brave, able, humane and generous *rebel*." "The term rebel," retorted Fox, "is no certain mark of disgrace. All the great asserters of liberty, the saviors of their country, the benefactors of mankind have been called 'rebels.' We owe our constitution which enables us to sit in this house to a rebellion."

The remains of Montgomery were removed in 1818 in compliance with a special act of the Legislature, and were deposited near the monument which the United States Government had erected in his memory. The ceremonies were conducted on a most brilliant scale. The tablet bears the following inscriptions:

This Monument is erected by the order of Congress 25th Janry, 1776, to transmit to Posterity a grateful remembrance of the patriotism conduct enterprize & performance

of Major General RICHARD MONTGOMERY

who after a series of successes amidst the most discouraging Difficulties Fell in the attack on

QUEBEC. 31st Decbr., 1775. Aged 37 Years.

The State of New York

Caused the Remains of

Maj. Genl. RICHARD MONTGOMERY

to be conveyed from Quebec

and deposited beneath this Monument

the 8th day of July

1818

Montgomery's will is still extant and bears the signature of Benedict Arnold. To his sister Sarah, Lady Ranelagh, he left his estate of Kingsbridge. Doubt is cast upon the genuineness of the Montgomery house on Fort Independence Street. Thomas Henry Edsall, the historian of Kingsbridge, states that the original house was burned and completely destroyed by the British during the Revolution. William Ogden Giles, who bought the property and

built his own house on the site of Fort Independence, which had been erected on the Montgomery farm, maintained that it is the original Montgomery house, and pointed to the fact that its beams are of hewn oak, a sure sign of antiquity .

CHAPTER XX

THE VAN CORTLANDTS

The Old Public-Spirited Colonial Family Who Figured Prominently in American History—Cortlandt Manor Founded, 1697—Pierre and Philip Van Cortlandt Who Scorned England's Promises and Favors and Espoused the American Cause.



AN CORTLANDT PARK perpetuates the name of the old and honorable family who established Cortlandt Manor, and who played a prominent part in New York during the Colonial and Revolutionary periods. Oloff Stevenson Van Cortlandt, the founder of the family in America, came to New Amsterdam in the same vessel with Kieft, on March 28, 1638, as an officer in the service of the West India Company. He was a lineal descendant of the Dukes of Courland in Russia. When deprived of the duchy of Courland, his ancestors emigrated to Holland. The family name was Stevens, or Stevenson, van (from) Courland, and they adopted the latter as a surname, the true orthography in Dutch being *Kortelandt*, signifying "short-land." Oloff Stevenson Van Cortlandt was made a commissary of the shop, or customs office, in 1639, and he had charge of the public stores of the company until 1648. He then became a merchant and brewer, and rose to the position of being one of the richest men in New Amsterdam. In 1654, he was appointed Burgomaster (mayor) of New Amsterdam, which office he held almost without interruption until 1664, when the Dutch colony was surrendered to the British. He died in New York, April 4, 1687.

Stephanus Van Cortlandt, the son of Oloff S. Van Cortlandt, born May 4, 1643, became at the age of thirty-four, the first native-born mayor of New York City, and held that office almost consecutively till his death, November 25, 1700. At the time of Leisler's Rebellion (1689-1691), he was one of the Royal Counsellors, and having opposed Leisler, the self-styled "Cromwell" of New York, he was obliged to fly from the city to avoid imprisonment.

Leisler sent a constable to the house of Mayor Van Cortlandt to obtain the city charter, seals, records, etc., which would lend dignity to his office. Van Cortlandt was not at home. A committee was appointed to wait upon Mrs. Van Cortlandt and demand them of her. She received the committee politely, but declined to give up anything which had been left in her care by her husband. A sergeant-at-arms next visited her but when she learned his errand she coolly shut the door in his face and defied his blustering threats. An effort to find and imprison Van Cortlandt was then made, but without success. Stephanus Van Cortlandt lived with his wife, the beautiful Gertrude Schuyler, daughter of the mayor of Albany, on the corner of Broad and Pearl Streets until his estates were erected into a manor by patent from William III., on June 17, 1697, and he subsequently built the first Cortlandt Manor house on the shore of Croton Bay. The main portion of the edifice was the original block-house built by Governor Dongan in the early part of his administration as a rendezvous for fishing parties and conferences with the Indians. Stephanus Van Cortlandt, who in 1683 was appointed by the King of England one of Dongan's privy council, usually accompanied him on these expeditions, and subsequently purchased land thereabouts from the Indians—85,000 acres, extending to the Connecticut line. The block-house, which with its solid stone walls three feet thick, and loop-holes for musketry provided for the emergencies of life in a savage wilderness, was converted into a commodious dwelling.

The lords of Cortlandt had the privilege of sending a representative to the Provincial Assembly, and the manor was held by a feudal tenure, for which the rent of forty shillings (about \$10.) was paid annually to the crown on the feast-day of the Annunciation.

Jacobus Van Cortlandt the third son of Oloff Stevenson Van Cortlandt, and the seventh and younger member of the family, born July 7, 1658, was a member of the first three William and Mary assemblies, and also in 1702-1709. He was the mayor of New York in 1710 and also in 1719. He was a large landholder and one of the most prominent men of his time. He married Eva, the adopted daughter of Frederick Philipse, the "Dutch millionaire" and lord of the manor of Philipseburgh, then extending along the Hudson River from below the present site of Riverdale, northerly to the mouth of Croton River above Sing Sing. By purchasing

fifty acres of land on George's Point from his father-in-law and about one hundred acres from the neighboring landowners, Jacobus Van Cortlandt became the owner of the chief part of the present City of Yonkers lying below the Philipseburgh estate, including the present Van Cortlandt Park, Riverdale, Kingsbridge, etc. The title was subsequently confirmed by the Indians in 1701 for "two fathoms of duffels and £1 2s 6d (\$5.62) current money of New York." His estate in Yonkers was bought by New York City from his descendants and was made part of Van Cortlandt Park.

During the Revolution the proprietors of Van Cortlandt Manor, Pierre and his son Philip Van Cortlandt, espoused the American cause despite the fact that the Philipses and the younger branches of the Van Cortlandt family remained Tories. Augustus Van Cortlandt, grandson of Jacobus and ancestor of the Yonkers branch of the Van Cortlandt family, was a loyalist. On August 18, 1776, he was obliged to flee, for he had been warned that Tory-hunters were on their way to capture him. While he was concealed in a cow-house for ten days, a conscientious Dutch farmer walked backwards, when he carried him his meals, in order to be able to swear he had not seen him. At last he reached the British lines on Staten Island in safety.

The staunchest allies of Washington during his critical position in New York were Pierre and Philip Van Cortlandt. Both father and son had nobly declined the offers of royal favors, honors, grants of land, and if they would abandon the popular cause, made by Tryon when he visited them at the old manor-house for a few days in 1774. The younger Van Cortlandt destroyed a major's commission which Tryon had sent him.

Pierre Van Cortlandt, grandson of Stephanus, was born in Cortlandt Manor, January 10, 1721. He was a member of the first Provincial Congress of New York; chairman of the Committee of Public Safety; and he was exceedingly active in the patriot cause. He was one of the thirty-eight men who ratified the Declaration of Independence on horseback at White Plains, on the 9th of July, 1776; and from October of the same year, when elected vice-president of the Convention, was almost the sole presiding officer of that heroic body until it completed its labors. He was the first Lieutenant-Governor of New York State, to which office he was elected in 1777, and he acted in that capacity consecutively for eighteen years until he declined re-election. Governor Clinton be-

ing much absorbed in military duties, Van Cortlandt was chief executive and civil magistrate during a greater portion of the Revolution. So obnoxious was he to the British government that it set a bounty on his head. His undismayed faithfulness when driven from his estates, and when adverse clouds darkened the entire horizon proved a source of inspiration among all classes in the State of New York. He died in Cortlandt Manor, May 1, 1814.

Philip Van Cortlandt, son of Pierre, was born September 1, 1749, and died unmarried at the Van Cortlandt manor-house, November 21, 1831. He was graduated from King's College in 1758 when he became a land surveyor. When the war broke out he was elected to the Provincial Assembly which met in New York City, May 23, 1775, to choose delegates to the Continental Congress. He was later appointed lieutenant-colonel in the American army, and he commanded the regiment detailed to guard the public stores at Peekskill. In the spring of 1776, he was on duty at Ticonderoga, and a member of a court-martial for the trial of Moses Hazen, charged by Benedict Arnold for disobedience of orders. "I remained," he wrote in one of his letters, "long enough to discover the vile conduct of Arnold in procuring a vast quantity of goods from the merchants of Montreal, which he intended for, and which I believe was appropriated to his own use. For this, and also for improper conduct before the court, he would have been arrested himself, but escaped by procuring an order from General Gates to send me the morning after the court adjourned, to Scheneshorough (Whitehall) by which means the court was dissolved and Arnold escaped."

Philip Van Cortlandt fought gallantly at Bemus Heights and at Saratoga. The Battle of Saratoga, which resulted in the surrender of Burgoyne, October 17, 1777, was a decisive battle in the war, for henceforward the Americans were no longer "rebels" but patriots fighting against oppression and wrong. The British were beginning to fear imminent disgrace, and the talk of reconciliation became prominent in Parliament.

In 1778, he was sent to protect the New York frontiers against the Indians under Brant, and in 1780 he was one of the Court-martial convened in Philadelphia to try Benedict Arnold for improper conduct. Arnold had been living in high style and gave sumptuous entertainments at a time when his accounts with the government were as yet unsettled. He was known to have made

temporary use of the public moneys passing thru his hands. He had married Margaret Shippen whose family were not in sympathy with the American cause. And yet Arnold was a crippled soldier who had fought bravely at Quebec and in other significant battles. It was not therefore surprising that he was let off with a reprimand which Washington administered with consummate delicacy. But Philip Van Cortlandt and the four other officers who had served on the Hazen trial knew well the true character of the one who so soon afterwards turned out to be a despicable traitor. "We voted for cashiering him," wrote Van Cortlandt in his diary, "but were overruled by a sentence of reprimand. Had they all known what we knew he would have been dismissed the service."

In 1780, Philip Van Cortlandt commanded a regiment under Lafayette; was with him at Virginia; and for his gallant conduct at Yorktown was promoted to brigadier-general. With the conclusion of the War, he did not retire and live on the fat of his lands, but he continued in the public service. He became a Commissioner of Forfeitures of the counties of Westchester, Richmond, Kings, Queens, and Suffolk, and the first supervisor of the town of Cortlandt in 1788. He served in both branches of the New York legislature, and he was also a delegate of the State convention that adopted the National Constitution. He was member of Congress from 1793 to 1809, and a presidential elector in 1812. He was one of the original members of the Cincinnati, and its first treasurer.

He was on terms of intimacy with Lafayette and he accompanied him thru the United States on his memorable tour in 1824. His personal resemblance to Lafayette was on one occasion turned to decided advantage. At a large reception Lafayette, becoming weary of handshaking, suddenly disappeared, leaving Van Cortlandt as his substitute. The multitude did not discover the change and went away satisfied with having, as they supposed, grasped the hand of the French nobleman.

Pierre Van Cortlandt, Jr., son of the Lieutenant-governor, was fond of recounting his first meeting with Washington. Being a lad of fourteen at the breaking out of the war, he was sent to the new college at New Brunswick for his education. His father wrote him a letter introducing him to Washington who was then in New Jersey. Young Pierre presented the letter, but his courage oozed away in the stately presence, and when invited to dinner the next day he stammered a faint "Yes." When the time drew nigh for

him to appear again before the great personage, he was overcome with timidity and after going a little way towards headquarters, he turned about and ran home. The next morning he accidentally met Washington, who, before the youngster could escape, exclaimed, "Master Cortlandt, where were you yesterday?" The boy tried to articulate an excuse. "Master Cortlandt," interrupted Washington with grave solemnity, "Mrs. Washington and myself expected you at dinner yesterday; we waited a few moments for you; you inconvenienced my family by failing to keep your word: you are a young lad, Master Cortlandt, and let me advise you, hereafter, when you make a promise or an engagement, never fail to keep it. Good morning, Master Cortlandt!"

CHAPTER XXI

PELHAM AND WESTCHESTER

Thomas Pell the Founder of Pelham Manor—The Glittering Pageant of Lord Howe's Troops to Impress the Westchesterites with the Strength of the British Army—History of St. Peter's Church, Westchester.



REV. ISAAC WILKINS

PELHAM MANOR derived its name from Thomas Pell, the first permanent settler of that region. Thomas Pell was an English gentleman and an ardent royalist. Previous to his coming to America he had been Gentleman of the Bedchamber to Charles I. Obligated to leave the colony of New Haven because he refused to swear allegiance on the ground that he had already taken oath in England, he came to Westchester, where, on November 14, 1657, he purchased from the Indian sachems, Maminepoe and Annhooke, 9,166 acres including the estate formerly owned and occupied by Anne Hutchinson.

In the center of a large field in front of the Bartow mansion, now the summer home of the Crippled Children's Association, are the remains of the Pell Treaty Oak, where Thomas Pell smoked the pipe of peace with the Siwanoy Indian chiefs after signing the deed which gave him possession of "all that tract of land called Westchester which is bounded on the east by . . . Gravelly Brook, and so running northward . . . about eight miles, thence west to . . . a certain bend in Bronck's River, thence by marked trees south until it reaches the tide waters in the Sound . . . together with all the islands lying beyond that tract."

The village of Westchester, which was called by the Dutch *Oostdorp* (East Farms in contradistinction to West Farms), while the whole region was known as *Vriedelandt* (Land of Peace), had been included in the Dutch purchase of 1640. When the news of the Pell purchase reached Governor Stuyvesant, he despatched, on

April 19, 1655, Marshall Claes Van Elslant to warn "Thomas Pell and other trespassers" that the same land had already been bought of the Indians and paid for by other parties, and to order the intruders to leave the spot. When Van Elslant arrived at *Oostdorp* on the twenty-second, he was confronted by a band of armed men. Undaunted, he jumped ashore, and tho at once made prisoner, he read the writ and then handed it to Pell, who said:

"I cannot understand Dutch; why did not the Fiscal send it in English? If you send it in English then I shall send an answer in writing. But it's no matter; we expect the ships from England and Holland which are to bring the settlement of the boundary."

The marshal was later released and permitted to return to New Amsterdam.

Stuyvesant then planned an expedition to surprise the intruders at night, drive them from *Oostdorp* and burn their houses. The expedition, however, did not set out until March 6, 1656. When the Dutch reached *Oostdorp* eight days later, they found the settlers prepared for them; but they soon disarmed them and took twenty-three of them prisoners to New Amsterdam. Yielding to the pleadings of the wives of the prisoners the Dutch released them upon their payment of the expenses of the expedition and their promising to leave the colony within six weeks.

On the sixteenth of March, the settlers drew up a petition to the Dutch, praying permission to remain at *Oostdorp* and offering allegiance to "the Governor of the Manattas," provided that they be permitted to manage their local affairs. This the governor and council forthwith granted, content with the establishment of their claim to the *Vriedelandt*.

For eight years the settlers of Westchester remained under Dutch jurisdiction. On March 23, 1664, Charles II., as a preliminary step toward declaring war with Holland, vested in his brother James, the Duke of York and Albany, the Dutch province of New Netherland. The Duke of York accordingly organized an expedition, consisting of four ships and four hundred and fifty land troops, under the command of Colonel Richard Nicolls, accompanied by Governor John Winthrop of Connecticut.

The ships reached New Amsterdam on September 6, 1664,—just about the time when the settlers of Westchester were petitioning the New England authorities to aid them in overthrowing the Dutch claims to their property. Stuyvesant and his council-

lors, realizing their unpreparedness for war and the superiority of the invading English, surrendered to Nicolls without any show of resistance.

Colonel Nicolls became Governor of New York, and all those who held deeds from the Dutch Company were given new ones in the name of the Duke of York. Pell's purchase of 1654 was accordingly confirmed on October 6, 1666, by the governor, and a patent was granted him creating him Lord of Pelham Manor, "as if he had held the same immediately from his majesty the King of England." The annual quit-rent was a lamb "if the same shall be demanded."

Pell's possession comprised 9,166 acres. Of this tract John Pell, nephew of the first owner, sold 6,100 acres to Governor Leisler in 1688 for the Huguenot settlement of New Rochelle, now the city of that name in Westchester County. Pelham township, of the same county, was also part of the original Pelham Manor. The portion belonging to the Borough comprises what was once Annes Hoeck (later called Pell's Neck) and Rodman's Neck, as well as Hunter, Twin, Hart, High and City Islands.

Thomas Pell died in September, 1669, at Fairfield, Connecticut. He bequeathed "his lands and houses in any part of New England, or in ye territoryes of ye Duke of York," to John Pell, in England, the only son of his only brother, the Rev. Dr. John Pell. This John Pell, who is supposed to have been lost in his yacht off City Island in 1702, was succeeded by his son Thomas, whose descendants were proprietors of Pelham, down to the fourth and last lord of the manor, who died in 1776.

The original Pell manor-house was situated on the east side of the Eastern Boulevard, near the present Bartow mansion, tho another authority says it was located on the extreme end of Pelham Neck. The story runs that while Pell was looking for a site to build his dwelling he noticed nests of fish-hawks in the oaks and chestnuts near Pelham Neck. He was at that time possessed of a superstition that where this bird nested there good luck would come. The word *Pelham* is formed from *Pell* and *Ham* (Home).

Between the Bartow mansion and the Sound is the Pell family burial ground. The four stone corner-posts bear the coat-of-arms of the Pell family—a *Pelican Gorged*—and each has a different inscription, as follows:

North:
 INDIAN GRANT
 of
 PELHAM MANOR
 to
 THOMAS PELL
 Nov. 14, 1654.

East:
 PELHAM BAY PARK
 1884
 ERECTED 1891
 BY DESCENDANTS OF
 BENJAMIN PELL
 GRANDSON OF
 THOMAS PELL
 LORD OF THE MANOR

South:
 ROYAL PATENT
 Oct. 25, 1687.
 JAMES II.
 to
 JOHN PELL
 2ND LORD OF THE MANOR
 FIRST JUDGE, 1688
 AND FIRST MEMBER
 PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY
 1691
 OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY

West:
 ROYAL PATENT
 Oct. 6, 1666.
 DUKE OF YORK
 to
 THOMAS PELL
 1st LORD OF THE MANOR

The large stone in the center was erected in 1862 by James K. Pell and it is inscribed:

"This stone is placed here in token of respect for the memory of . . . several of the descendants of JOHN PELL, who was born in the year 1643 and died in the year 1700, the son of the REV. JOHN PELL, D.D. and the nephew of THOMAS PELL, the first proprietor of the Lordship and manor of Pelham, born in the year 1603 and died in the year 1669."

The oldest inscription reads:

"HER LYES ISEC PELL D. DEC. 14, ANNO 1748."

On the other side of Split Rock Road or Collins Lane along which the Americans retreated, stands the pre-Revolutionary Collins mansion or Joshua Pell house which is fast crumbling away. At the foot of Prospect Hill is the finest Pell mansion of all, now remodeled and modernized. The splendid group of pine trees surrounding the house, shade the magnificent columns on either side of the doorway. The unique iron lattice-work forms a pretty balcony. On the opposite side can be seen the family coat-of-arms.

At the corner of Wolf's Lane and Boston Road is another modernized Pell house where it is said Howe and his officers seized the very last turkey of the people living there and dined unbidden.

In the woods not far from the large stone Pell mansion is the "Lord Howe chestnut" beneath whose unbrageous branches Lord Howe and his officers lunched with a number of Westchester loyalists whom he had invited for the occasion. On the morning of October 23, 1776, Westchester County beheld a most magnificent pageant. Preparatory to pursuing Washington towards White Plains, Lord Howe drew up for review his entire army consisting of about 10,000 men each clad in his Sunday uniform. The soft green of the Hessians formed a charming contrast with the brilliant scarlet



LORD HOWE CHESTNUT

of the British regulars, while the bright arms of the troops glistened in the sunlight. After riding along the lines to inspect the army, Howe and his officers with the loyalist gentlemen, sat down at noon to partake of some refreshments. "Let us hope, however," we read, "that the meal of these fine gentlemen was not spoiled by the presence of that rough old German, the Count Von Knyphausen, who tho a dashing soldier and a brave man, was no courtier and anything but a pleasant dining companion."

Pelham Neck, which was called by the Dutch Annes Hoeck, or Ann's Neck, is situated between the Sound on the north and Eastchester Bay on the south, and is the largest of all the necks in the

Borough. The end of the neck opposite City Island with which it is connected by a bridge, is known as Rodman's Neck, after Samuel Rodman who purchased it from one of the manor-lords of Pelham. It is separated from the mainland by salt meadows over which the tide ebbs and flows. The City Island road passes over the meadows on a causeway.

Hunter's Island, which was originally part of the manor of Pelham and is now included in Pelham Bay Park, was sold by Joshua Pell to the Hunts and Hendersons, and after the latter it was at one time known as Henderson's Island. In the latter part of the eighteenth century it came into the possession of John Hunter, of Scotch descent, from whom the island received its present name. On the crest of the island is the Iselin mansion, which had been erected about 1850 by Elias des Brosses Hunter, son of John Hunter, but which was owned by Columbus Iselin at the time Pelham Bay Park was formed in 1888. This mansion is now used as the summer home of the "Little Mothers" Society of the Protestant Episcopal Church. Opposite the gate-posts is the Hunter's Island Inn, formerly the mansion belonging to Elizabeth De Lancey, a daughter of Elias des Brosses Hunter. It is said that Joseph Bonaparte offered a large sum for Hunter's Island before making his home at Bordentown, New Jersey.

On the southeast side of the island are the great Indian rock "Mishow,"—around which the Indians used to conduct their religious and other rites,—and the graves of two Indian sachems. On the northeast is a great boulder known as the "Gray Mare." Many Indian relics have been found in the neighborhood, including arrows and javelins of flint, quartz, and horn, and hatchets and tomahawks of stone. The Indian name for the entire region was *Laaphawachking* (the place of stringing beads).

Passing the white stone gate-posts on the Eastern Boulevard, the road on which the Boston Mansion is situated, we reach the causeways connecting the two small islands called the "Twins" with Hunter's Island. One of the grandest marine views can be seen from the Ogden mansion on the outer Twin Island.

In August, 1814, during the War of 1812, an engagement took place off Pelham and New Rochelle between the American gunboats and the British warships. What saved the Americans was the knowledge of the many rocks and reefs hereabouts. There is a story current among the old residents that one of the Schuylers

who resided in Pelham was upset in his boat not far from City Island. When picked up by passing craft he was found calmly sitting on the bottom of the capsized boat, smoking his pipe which he somehow managed to keep lit.

One of the landmarks in Westchester is St. Peter's Church on Westchester Avenue. The present building is the fourth on this site, the first having been erected in 1700 when the trustees resolved "to build a church twenty-eight feet square, with a terret on top" for a bell tower. It stood on the old Town Green, close to



ST. PETER'S CHURCH, WESTCHESTER

the former County Court House, about on the site of the present Sunday School building. It was used as a church until 1788, when it was in such bad condition after the Revolution that it was sold to Mrs. Sarah Ferris who removed it.

St. Peter's was established in accordance with the Royal direction received by the Governor of the Province of New York:

"You shall take an especial care that God Almighty be devoutly and duly served thruout ye Government, the Book of Common Prayer, as it is now established read each Sunday and Holy day and the blessed Sacrament administered according to the rites of the Church of England."

On the 12th day of September, 1693, "An Act for settling a Ministry and raising a maintenance for them" was introduced in the General Assembly, the preamble of which read, "Whereas Profaneness and Licentiousness hath of late overspread this Province for want of a settled Ministry thruout the same, To the end the same may be removed and the Ordinances of God daily administered." Despite the heavy charge expressed in the preamble, the legislators were indifferent. The act, however, was passed on the 21st September thru the efforts of Governor Benjamin Fletcher, who was characterized by the Indians *Cajenquiurogoe* (the Lord of the Great Swift Arrow); Mr. Jones Graham, the Speaker of the House; and Colonel Caleb Heathcote who was later the first Warden of the Parish (1695) and in 1711 Mayor of the City of New York.

The Act in its provisions comprehended the City of New York and the three counties of Richmond, Westchester and Queens. In the County of Westchester were formed two precincts the first including the towns of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham; the second embraced the towns of Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford.

In 1694, at a town meeting at Eastchester, it was resolved that "Lift John Drake and Henry Fowler Senr." be chosen to act "in their behalf . . . in the business according to the warrant of procuring a minister." On the 2d day of May of the following year Mr. Warren Mather, a dissenting preacher was settled among them. Col. Heathcote, the first Church Warden protested that they had no right "to pay for the maintenance of any minister not of the National Church." In 1700 a bill was passed making Eastchester a separate parish and Mr. Joseph Morgan, another dissenter, was settled.

On the Festival of St. Michael and All Saints, 1702, the Rev. John Bartow, the Propagation Society's missionary arrived in New York. He was sent to take charge of the Upper Parish of the County (Rye, Mamaroneck and Bedford) but he stopped at Westchester with Col. Graham, who had framed the Act of 1693. He was invited by the people to give a sermon on the next Sabbath Day, October 3d. After the service Col. Heathcote, Col. Graham and other chief inhabitants begged Mr. Bartow to stay among them, to which Mr. Bartow assented provided the change should receive

the Governor's approval. This was obtained, and on December 6th, a memorable day for Westchester, he was inducted.

About this time William and Mary vetoed the Act of Separation. Eastchester chafed under his judgment. "Some," said Mr. Bartow afterwards, "had given out threatening words should I dare to come." But one summer Sunday morning in 1703, Mr. Bartow made his appearance in the little shingle-sided meeting house at Eastchester. In the afternoon he performed the Church of England service, Mr. Morgan himself being present and neither he nor the people seemed dissatisfied. "On coming among them," says Mr. Hawkins, the Secretary of the Propagation Society, "they were so well satisfied with the liturgy and doctrine of the Church of England, that they forsook their minister and conformed to the Church of England."

To Mr. Bartow's twenty-three years of faithful service both St. Peter's of Westchester and St. Paul's of Eastchester owe their solid foundation.

The inscription on a tablet, the gift of Morey Hale Bartow, in St. Peter's Church reads:

"He was a faithful one in Christ. REVEREND JOHN BARTOW, first Rector of this Parish . . . was sent to America as a missionary and settled over the Parish from November 19, 1702, until his death, at this place, February 9, 1726."

In 1762 the members of the congregation secured from George III. a charter styled, "The Royal Charter of St. Peter's Church in the Borough Town of West Chester."

In 1790 a much larger and more imposing edifice was erected which sixty-four years afterward was burned to the ground. A third structure met with a similar fate. The present St. Peter's is a modern stone building, imposing, and beautiful. The chime of bells is said to have been presented in the time of Queen Anne.

The oldest head-stone in St. Peter's churchyard dates back to 1702. Some of the prominent families interred there are—Costers, Honeywells, who came to Westchester in 1693 and whose descendants are still here. Waterburys, Valentines, Morrisises, McNeils, Setons, Simpsons, Wilkins, Hoffmans, Bayards, Desbrosses, Hunts, Boltens, Delanceys, Powells, Lorillards and Bartows.

Near St. Peter's burying-ground is the Ferris graveyard, also known as the Pasture Hill Burying Ground where are the family

vaults of Benjamin Ferris, also numerous headstones to the Pell family.

Beyond the Sunday School building, a short distance south of the church, stood the ancient Orthodox Quaker Meeting House, built in 1723. In 1826 it was changed to Hicksites, after an American Quaker named Hicks. Two years later, the Orthodox built the Friends Meeting House on the opposite side of the Street. Both were destroyed by fire on the same night in the spring of 1893. Just beyond flows the Indian Brook, now called Seabury Creek, on whose banks the celebrated George Fox is said to have addressed, in 1672, the first Quaker meeting ever held in America. To the west is the St. Peter's Rectory opposite Glebe Avenue, standing on land forming part of the "Ancient Glebe" given by the town to the church in 1703, and otherwise known as "Parsonage Land."

On the opposite side of Westchester Road St. Boniface Inn bore the curious inscription:

No Really Destitute Person need Pass This House Hungry.

Another landmark of Westchester is the shingle-sided old fashioned house, west of the Westchester Creek Causeway, which was used as a country store where almost anything under the sun could be purchased. Tradition has it that a young man once jocosely asked the storekeeper—Sidney B. Bowne, who was a Quaker,—whether he had a pulpit in stock. The clever shopkeeper winked to his son and said: "If thee will go up in the garret, thee will find Parson Wilkins's old pulpit behind the chimney."

CHAPTER XXII

THE OLD TIMERS' ASSOCIATION

Men Who Have been Residents of The Bronx for Fifty Years or More--
An Interesting Chapter By its Historian, Sidwell S. Randall.



AS a vast new population came surging into The Bronx, old residents who had lived for half a century or more in the comparatively new district north of the Harlem River, became slowly and by degrees aware of the fact that they were involuntarily becoming strangers in a land where they had resided from boyhood upward. Indeed, many of these old settlers became startlingly aware of the further fact that they, who but a few years previously were the owners of much of the lands in the old towns of Morrisania, West Farms, Melrose, East and Westchester were no longer important factors in the territory of which once they might have been said to be "Lords of the Manor." In few words, death and change and time had apparently deprived them of their identity and status. Naturally this altered condition of affairs reluctantly forced the knowledge upon them that, unless they combined and formed an association which would bring together in a close fellowship the older members of the community in which they were once so powerful and well known, they would be lost in the busy stirring City that had so suddenly sprung up all around and about them.

Acting upon this conviction a number of old citizens met together one evening two years ago, at the headquarters of the Exempt Firemen at Third Avenue and 147th Street and their deliberations resulted in the formation of a society known as the "Old Timers of The Bronx," whose end and aim would be cordial amity, friendship and the promotion of the best interests of all its members socially and mentally. The sole qualifications of admission to membership in this organization is a nominal fee and a residence in the Borough of over fifty years. By a unanimous vote Hon. Louis F. Haffen was selected as its first President, for he is

one who has identified himself from early manhood with every local improvement that has made our Borough more wonderfully prosperous and beautiful than any other section of Greater New York, not only by individual efforts on his part but also by serving with conspicuous ability his native place for four consecutive terms as its Borough President. The other officers elected at this time were: Julius Heiderman, 1st Vice-President; Theodore Weberg,



GROUP OF "OLD TIMERS"

2d Vice-President; George W. Pouder, Treasurer; Daniel A. McCormick, George H. Robert Danfield, Secretaries; and Sidwell S. Randall, Historian.

As matters now stand, success has followed every step of its progress; its meetings are largely attended, and its treasury shows so satisfactory a financial balance that soon it will have a local habitation and a name of its own that will be a credit not only to The Bronx but also to the City at large.

It should be added that every class of religion and politics is represented in this club. Some of the older generations of the Old

Timers remember the period when a few hundrds of sturdy pioneers formed the nucleus of the future towns of Melrose, Morrisania, and West Farms, which are now populous sections of the Greater City.

Among the important objects sought to be carried out by the Old Timers is the preservation of the ancient landmarks of the Borough for, unless this be speedily done, every vestige of many of its interesting historical mementoes will be ruthlessly destroyed or obliterated by a new generation who apparently neither know nor care about the history of the past. Already a number of new dwellers of The Bronx, actuated solely by commercial instincts and personal aggrandizement, have built their homes on spots made sacred by the deeds of our ancestors. In cases like these it is the imperative duty of all of us, before it be too late, to mark by tablets places of such inestimable value not only to the antiquarian but to every true lover of his country.

In addition to such ends and aims, old monuments, books, papers and documents have been collected by the Society, and will in the future be presented to appropriate Municipal authorities. Surely such footprints in the sands of time must be carefully guarded lest they be stamped out by the heedless and careless strangers who rush in where angels fear to tread.

Again, we must not forget the old families, whose habitations, tho widely scattered, might well be considered mile-stones in the original settlements north of the Harlem River. These families have representatives in the Old Timers whose members served under Grant, Sherman and Sheridan in the war of the rebellion and at the meetings of our novel Society, these old soldiers, compare their experiences on many hotly contested fields in the far south and, with one accord, propose to preserve and protect the burial places of the martyrs of the war, many of which the City authorities have altogether neglected and forgotten. Nor do the Old Timers purpose to allow the present generation to overlook the invaluable services rendered but a few years ago by the Volunteer Fire Department of the Annexed Wards when there were no bounds to the district this department considered within its limits. Not a few of us recall incidents of those days when in search of fires and in the performance of their duties The Bronx firemen took their machines as far south as Fourteenth Street. Naturally a great number of the Old Timers are exempt firemen in the broadest

sense of the word and they are proud of a well-earned record for promptness and efficiency in cases of emergencies in summer, winter, night and day.

Tho time and space will not permit the writer to name all Old Timers whose fellow citizens have honored with official preferments, he would not willingly omit to mention its Vice-President, Ex-Justice Julius Heiderman, nor that able jurist, Hon. John J. Brady of the Supreme Court. Again my narrative would be incomplete did I not allude to the Berrians and the Briggs families whose ancient pedigree and homesteads go back to dates whereof the memory of man runneth not to the contrary. Josiah A. Briggs recently Chief Engineer of the Borough of The Bronx, is always to be seen in his familiar seat in the front section of Washington Hall, the present Headquarters of the Old Timers, an interested partaker in the deliberations of the Association. Also, on the platform, gracing his position as one of the officials of the Old Timers, Theodore Weberg, a natural born orator, commands more than ordinary attention. His thrilling description of his campaign under Grant during the last years of the Civil War vividly brings back to the memory of all his hearers a critical period in the history of the world. More than this, he has done much to immortalize the heroic bravery of many of his fellow townsmen, whose unknown graves lie somewhere on the banks of the Potomac and Appomattox Rivers.

One great benefit will accrue from the incorporation of this unique organization and it will result in the reunion of old companions who, while living in the vicinity of one another, were, singularly enough, not aware of the fact, for in all large cities frequently intimate acquaintances ignorantly and unconsciously as it were, reside in immediate proximity until some accidental meeting reveals the truth that they were residents of the same street or neighborhood. Very recently the writer himself met his former friend James Lyon of Tremont, a well-known citizen of The Bronx. Circumstances had separated us for over a score of years, and yet, our homes were but a short distance apart.

Be this as it may, the Old Timers, at their monthly meetings, discuss in an amicable spirit the strange vicissitudes and changes that time and fortune have wrought in the various destinies of their lives. A few who were running around bare-footed and coatless for lack of better clothing when The Bronx was comparatively a

wilderness, are now wealthy, while their associates who were then driving their horses and carriages thru its thoroughfares are now conductors on our City Railroad. And, by the way, in those early days the trolley system was an unknown factor, and only stages took passengers to and from Manhattan Island, the heavy iron bridge which afterwards spanned the Harlem River not then being in existence. It was alleged when this structure was built that it contained enough metal to support two of its nature and kind and that the same was paid for by the pound and not for its entirety.

Previous to the date of its construction, a venerable wooden bridge, too often useless and out of repair, supplied the necessities of the then out-of-town settlers.

Briefly the Old Timers may be characterized as infinitesimal atoms in the ocean of humanity around and about them. "The old order yieldeth to the new," for now, alas, the members of this odd fraternity can wander for hours about their native place, where once everybody knew them, without receiving a single friendly nod or greeting of recognition from anyone.

Before concluding my epitome of the novel organization of which I write, let me say I would very much like, had I space and opportunity, individually to specify all its members. Our genial and overworked secretaries, Messrs. McCormick, Dyer and Danfield, however, deserve and shall receive especial commendation for the cordial interest they have shown in its present and future welfare. And the same may be deservedly said of its other officials, George W. Pouder, William Huck and Josiah A. Briggs. What is very gratifying to the Old Timers is the kind interest the public has taken in its end and aim as well as the objects it seeks to accomplish. The sympathy that their fellow citizens extend is not only very pleasing but will stimulate our organization intelligently and fittingly to carry the purposes for which it was organized. Possibly it may prove a laudable example for the old residents of the other boroughs of Greater New York to follow, and if so, its life will not be in vain. In any event the writer hopes its memory will not terminate with the lives of its present members.

INDEX

- Adams, Abigail (Mrs. W. S. Smith) 138
 Adams, George Washington ... 138
 Adams, President John 137, 138, 139
 Adams, Mrs. John Quincy 139
 Adams, President John Quincy 139
 Albany, 5, 10, 64, 168
 Albany Post Road ... 55, 64, 146, 160
 Algonquin Indians 148
 Allan, John 152, 153
 American Army, 19, 20, 55, 61, 86, 88, 108, 109, 112, 113, 126, 127, 128, 146, 147, 149, 162, 163, 170
 American Bank Note Company . 41
 Amsterdam 10
 "Ancient Glebe" 182
 Anderson, Rev. R. 11
 Andre, Major 149
 Andriessen, Pieter 9
 Andros, Governor Edmund 13
 Annes Hoeck (Ann's Neck) 122, 123, 175, 177
 Annhooke 136, 173
 Aquahung 9
 Arnold, General Benedict, 164, 165, 170, 171
 Asia, British Frigate 93
 Ayres, Captain 149
- Baldwin, Colonel 128, 129
 Bailey mansion 161
 Barclay mansion 54
 Barretto, Francis J. 110
 Barretto homestead 91
 Barretto's Point ... 89, 90, 91, 110
 Bartow, Basil 73
 Bartow, Rev. John 73, 180, 181
 Bartow, Morley Hale 181
 Bartow mansion 173, 175
 Bathgate, Alexander 68
 Bathgate farm 68
 Baxter, Capt. Charles 144
 Beck, Charles Bathgate 143
 Beck Memorial Presbyterian Church 143
 Bedford 180
 Bedford Park 40, 41, 109
 Beekman mansion 115
 Belmont 21, 141
 Bensonia 21
 Bensonia cemetery 81, 82
 Berrian's Neck 4
 Betts, Fletcher 87
- Bitter, Karl 5
 "Black Rock" 2
Black Swamp, the 68
 Blauzes, the 135
 Block, Adrien 8, 9, 121
Blythe 110
 Board of Trade, North Side, 24, 70
 Board of Education 73
 Boars' Den 66
 Bolton, Reginald P. 62, 72, 161
 Bonaparte, Joseph 178
 Borough Hall 68
 Boston mansion 178
 Boston Post Road, 20, 55, 72, 140, 146, 159
 Boston Road, 37, 43, 55, 64, 75, 107, 143, 146, 160, 176
 Botanical Gardens 65
 Boulevard Lafayette 5, 57
 Bound Brook 90
 Bowne house 182
 Bowne, Sidney B. 182
 Brady, Hon. John J. 186
 Brennan house 150
 Bridges 29, 30, 45
 Broadway 45, 53, 54
 Bronx-Astoria 54, 55
 Central (Macomb's Dam), 50, 51, 52, 53, 54
 City Island 133
 Farmer's (Free, Dyckman's, or Hadley's) 47, 48, 53, 161
 Fourth Avenue 53
 Harlem (Third Avenue), 48, 49, 53
 High 52
 Hudson Memorial 5, 55
 King's, 20, 45, 46, 47, 50, 52, 53, 54, 55, 62
 Lenox Avenue 54
 Madison Avenue 53
 New York-New Jersey 43
 Pelham 59, 120
 Putnam railroad 54
 Ship Canal 54
 Spuyten Duyvil Creek 45
 University Heights 54
 Washington 53, 54
 Williams's 20
 Willis Avenue 53
 Briggs, Josiah A 186, 187
Brightside 142, 143
 British Army, 19, 20, 65, 86, 88, 106, 107, 108, 109, 112, 113, 127, 128, 129, 146, 147, 161, 162

- Broadway34, 35
 Broadway-Lexington Avenue sub-
 way29, 31, 34, 35
 Bronck, Antonia Slagboom ...10, 119
 Bronck, Frank C.10
 Bronck, Jonas, 4, 9, 10, 11, 12, 83, 119
 122
 Bronck, Pieter Jonassen10
 Broncksland12, 13, 119
 Bronk, William R.10
 Bronx Beautiful Society70
 Bronx, Borough of The, 1, 3, 5, 8, 9,
 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31,
 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 38, 39, 41, 42, 43,
 44, 45, 54, 55, 56, 79, 81, 89, 95, 99,
 102, 106, 122, 178, 183, 184, 185,
 186, 187
 Bronx Chapter, D. A. R. ...65, 130
 Bronx County25, 27, 33
 Bronx Eye and Ear Infirmary ..79
 Bronx Hospital79
 Bronx Kills19, 43, 54
 Bronx Park, 2, 33, 43, 56, 66, 67, 68
 Bronx River, 9, 20, 23, 28, 39, 40, 44,
 59, 67, 81, 89, 119, 129, 148, 156,
 157, 173
 Bronx Society of Arts and
 Sciences67, 69
 Brown, Chancellor Elmer Ells-
 worth71, 74
 Brownson Literary Society100
 Bryant, Lieutenant127
 Bungay Creek89
 Burgoyne, Lieut.-Gen. John, 158, 170
 Burr, Colonel Aaron, 108, 136, 149,
 156
 Bussing's Point49
 Byrnes, Police Inspector82

Cajenquirogoe180
 Caldwell, Supervisor145
 Calver, W. L.161
 Cammann, Oswald, estate161
 Canal, Erie16, 45
 Harlem Ship42, 45
 Mott Haven21
 Carvel, Governor111
 Casanova33
 Casanova mansion83
 Casanova, Yglesias84, 85
 Castle Hill Neck121, 122
 Cemeteries, 75, 80, 81, 82, 91, 136, 144
 Central Union Gas Company ...42
 Chandler, Rev. Dr.121
 Charles I.173
 Charles II.12, 174
 Charter of Liberties93
 Chastellux, Marquis de162
 Chateaufneuf, Marquis de147
 Chatterton Heights147
 Cherry Point126
 Chimney Sweeps, The135
 Christian Brothers120
 Church of the Holy Nativity ...147
 Churches76, 136, 143, 147
 City History Club64
 City Island, 47, 77, 129, 130, 133, 134,
 135, 175, 178, 179
 City Island Road58, 129, 178
 Civil War, The, 70, 82, 144, 145, 186
 Claremont21, 70
 Claremont Park56, 57, 68, 69
 Clark, Daniel72
 Clason, Isaac120
 Clason's Point37, 119, 120
 Clason's Point Inn120
 Clason's Point Military Academy, 75,
 120
 Clemm, Mrs.152, 153
 Clemm, Virginia, (Mrs. Edgar
 Allan Poe),69, 151, 153
 Clinton, Gen. and Gov. George, 17,
 47, 139, 147, 169
 Clinton, General James147
 Clinton, Martha (Mrs. Havens) .147
 Cock Hill Fort160
 Cole, John125
 Colen, Donck157
 Coles, John B.48
 College of the City of New York 99
 Collins mansion175, 176
 Collins, Thomas122
 Colonial Dames, Society of62
 Columbia University15, 99
 Commissioners of Forfeiture ...48
 Committee of Public Safety, 15, 93,
 169
 Congress, Continental, 15, 16, 20, 128,
 158, 163, 164, 170
 Congress, Federal138, 171
 Constitution, Federal16
 Constitution, State16
 Convention, Constitutional16
 Convention of Towns90
 Cook, Walter5
 Cooper, Rev. Myles121
 Cornell, Sarah (Mrs. Thomas
 Willett)119
 Cornell, Thomas119
 Cornell's Neck119, 122
 "Cornfield Neck"91
 Corsa, Andrew109
 Cortlandt Manor167, 168, 170
 Cortlandt manor-house, 168, 169, 170
 Cosby, Gov. William13, 14
 Cousten, Josiah122
 Cox's Tavern53
 "Cradle of Cuban Liberty," The..83

- Crawford house 139
 Crippled Children, class for 73
 Crippled Children's Association . 173
 Crombie, Thomas J. 56
 Cromwell, Elizabeth 122
 Cromwell house 69, 122
 Cromwell, James 122
 Cromwell, John 122
 Cromwell, Lord Protector Oliver, 12.
 122
 Croton Bay 168
 Croton River 52, 156, 168
 Crotona Park 56, 57, 68, 69
 Crotona Parkway 68
 Crystal Palace 66
 Cunningham, Capt. William, 115, 116
 117
 Cunningham, Mrs. 144
 Curtis, Captain 129

 Danfield, George H. Robert .184, 187
 Daughters of Jacob 18
De Brant von Trogen 9
 Decatur, Commodore Stephen ... 135
 Declaration of Independence, 14, 15
 169
 De Lancey, Col. James, 14, 106, 108
 141, 162
 De Lancey's Block House 108
 De Lancey's Corps108, 161, 162
 De Lancey's Pine 108
 De Long, Lieut.-Col. 81
 De Voe Park 57
 De Voe's Point 49
 "Devil's Stepping Stones" 131
 De Vries, Pietrus Rudolphus .. 156
 Dongan, Governor 168
 Drake, John 180
 Drake, Joseph Rodman, 95, 96, 97, 98,
 100
 Drake, Samuel 135
 Duke of York (James II.), 13, 174,
 175, 176
Dunderberg, The 75
 Dutch, 4, 10, 11, 12, 13, 94, 123, 124,
 156, 157, 173, 174
 Dutch burial-ground 75
 Dutch East India Company, 4, 9, 175
 Dutch farmhouse 108
 Dutch garden 62
 Duyts, Laurens 9
 Dyckman, Abraham 108
 Dyckman, Jacob 47
 Dyckman, Michael 108

 Eastchester, 20, 72, 96, 135, 138, 139,
 180, 181, 183
 Eastchester Bay128, 177
 Eastchester Creek139, 140

 East Morrisania 21
 East River, 45, 53, 89, 96, 106, 113
 119
 Echo Park57, 69
 Eckford, Henry 96
 Eden mansion 78
 Edsall, Samuel 12
 Edsall, Thomas Henry 165
 Elton, Robert H. 81
 Eltona 21
Emmaus 9
 Eustis, James 135
 Exempt Firemen183, 185

 Faile, Charles V. 111
 Faile, E. G. 111
 Fairmount 141
 Farragut, Admiral David G. ... 81
 Federal Building 43
 Ferris, Benjamin 182
 Ferris graveyard 181
 Ferris, John 122
 Ferris mansion 122
 Ferris, Mrs. Sarah 179
 Fish, R. Bronck 10
 Fitzgerald, Edward 72
 Fitzgerald, Louis 56
 Fletcher, Governor Benjamin, 13, 186
 Fordham, 55, 75, 89, 141, 150, 153, 154
 Fordham Church69, 154, 159
 Fordham Company of Minute Men, 93
 Fordham Heights 73, 161
 Fordham Hospital76, 78, 79
 Fordham University 75, 109
 Forster 14
 Fort Cock Hill 160
 Fort George 161
 Fort Independence, 63, 146, 160, 161,
 162, 166
 Fort Number One 160
 Fort Number Two 160
 Fort Number Three 160
 Fort Number Four 160
 Fort Number Five 161
 Fort Number Six 161
 Fort Number Seven 161
 Fort Number Eight75, 161, 162
 Fort Prince Charles 160
 Fort Schuyler 126
 Fort Swartout 160
 Fort Totten 126
 Fort Tryon 161
 Fort Washington126, 160, 161
 Fort Washington Point 6
 Fowler, Henry 180
 Fox Corners 141
 Fox farm house 141
 Fox, George 182
 Fox, George, mansion 110

Fox Hills	91	Harlem Heights	112, 114
<i>Foxhurst</i>	141	Harlem Heights, Battle of	126
Fox, William W.	142	Harlem River, 9, 20, 21, 29, 30, 31,	33, 35, 37, 43, 45, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52,
Franz Sigel Park	57, 69	56, 75, 77, 133, 156, 161, 162, 183,	184, 187
Fraunce's Tavern	8	Harrison, President William H.	132
Friends Meeting House	182	Hart Island	134, 175
Ganley, J. V.	33	Haskin, John B.	145
Gates, General	170	Haven House	147
Gaynor, Mayor William J.	24	Hawkins, Mr.	181
George III.	181	Haughten, Charles W.	21
George' Point	169	Hazen, Lieut.-Col., Moses	170
Gibbs, L. G.	33	Heath, General William, 19, 20, 106,	127, 146, 162
Giles, William Ogden	160, 165	Heathcote, Col. Caleb	180
Glenn, Henry	155	Heidermen, Julius	184, 186
Glover, Charles	72	Hell Gate	17, 112
Glover, Colonel John, 3, 58, 128, 129	130	Hemlock Grove	66
"Glover's Rock"	3, 58, 130	Henderson's Island	178
"God's Acre"	98, 102	Henly, Major	20
Godwin, J. H.	52	Hessians	62, 128, 161, 162, 177
Goose Island	135	Hicksites	182
Gott, Mr.	73	Higgins, Hon. Thomas J.	25, 71, 98
Gouverneur, Sarah (Mrs. Lewis		High Bridge	52
Morris)	14	Highbridge	34, 35, 41, 50, 161
Graham, Isabella	14	Highbridgeville	21
Graham, Jones	180	High Island	134, 175
"Grange," The Hunt	92, 95, 96	High School, Gouverneur Morris, 70	76
Grant's Tomb	99	Hoe, Peter	143
"Gray Mare"	178	Hoe Octuple Press	143
<i>Great Eastern</i> , The	86	Hoe, Col. Richard March	142, 143
Great Kill	9	Hoe, Robert	142
Great Minniford's Island	133	Hoe Rotary Press	142
Great Neck	114	Hoit, Moses	135
"Grosjean"	139	Holler's Pond	140
Grove Farm Patent, The	90, 122	Holmes, James	159
Grovehill	21	Home for the Friendless	80
Guion Inn	139	Home Guards	106
Gun Hill Road	33	Home for Incurables	78, 79
Hadley, George	48	Hospitals	76, 79
Hadley house	64	Horton, George W.	133
Hadley, Joseph	92	Horton Farm	135
Haffen, Hon. Louis F., 24, 25, 26,	183	Horton Homestead	135
Haight, Nicholas	133	Howe, Admiral Lord, 59, 67, 120, 128	
Hale, Captain Nathan, 112, 114, 115,	116, 117	Howe, General Sir William, 3, 58, 106,	114, 115, 126, 127, 129, 148, 158,
<i>Halifax</i> , British Flagship	115	159, 176, 179	
<i>Half Moon</i> , The	4, 5, 6, 8	Howe Chestnut	59, 177
Hall, Edward Hagaman	161	"Huckleberry Road"	121
"Hall of Fame"	75, 155	Hudson, Henry	3, 4, 5, 6
Halleck, Fitz-Greene	97	Hudson Memorial Bridge	5, 55
Halsey mansion	138, 139	Hudson Monument	5
Hamilton, Alexander	17, 136	Hudson River, 5, 31, 54, 55, 57, 75,	77, 97, 127, 156, 157, 160, 168
Hand, Colonel Edward	127	Huguenots	2, 139, 175
Hand's Riflemen	127	Hunnewell, Captain	108
Hardenbroeck, Margaret (Mrs.			
Frederick Philipse)	156		
Harlem	49, 127		

- Hunt Burying-ground . . . 90, 98, 101
 Hunt Inn 141
 Hunt, Josiah 125
 Hunt, Montgomery 92
 Hunt, Judge Ward 98
 Hunt, Thomas (First), 90, 91, 92, 94, 122, 123
 Hunt, Thomas (Second), 90, 91, 92, 94, 141
 Hunt, Thomas (Fourth), 93
 Hunt's Point, 33, 39, 41, 89, 90, 92, 96, 97, 102, 122, 143
 Hunt's Point Road, 89, 90, 91, 112, 143
 Hunter, Elias des Brosses 178
 Hunter, Elizabeth (Mrs. De Lan-
 cey) 178
 Hunter Island 175, 178
 Hunter, John 134, 178
 Hunter's Island Inn 178
 Huntington Estate 131
Hussar, British Frigate, 86, 87, 101
 Hustace, Joshua 132
 Hustace House 147
 Hutchins, Waldo 56
 Hutchinson, Anne, 58, 122, 123, 124, 125, 136, 173
 Hutchinson, Frances 124, 125
 Hutchinson River, 43, 59, 123, 128, 129, 135
 Hyatt Farm 148
 Hyatt's Tavern 159
 Indian Brook 182
 Indian Cave 106
 Indian Field 65
 Indian Lake 67
 Indians, 1, 2, 4, 5, 6, 8, 15, 59, 60, 61, 64, 69, 89, 95, 106, 119, 120, 123, 124, 125, 135, 136, 148, 156, 168, 169, 170, 173, 174, 178, 180
 Interborough Rapid Transit Com-
 pany 34, 35
 Inwood 161
 Irving, Washington 7, 97
 Iselin, Columbus 178
 Iselin Mansion 178

 "Jack's Rock" 3
 Jackson, Colonel 20
 James II. (Duke of York), 13, 174, 175, 176
 Jay, Frances (Mrs. Frederick
 Van Cortlandt) 61
 Jay, Chief Justice John 61, 149
 Jenkins, Stephen 135, 158
 Jessup, Edward 89, 90, 110, 141
 Jessup, Elizabeth (Mrs. Thomas
 Hunt, Jr.) 90, 92
 Jessup, Maj.-Gen. Thomas Sidney, 90
- Joseph Rodman Drake Park, 57, 102
 Jumel, Madame 156
 Jumel Mansion 114, 156

 Ketcham, John 92
 Kieft, Governor Wilhelm, 60, 123, 167
 "King's Arms" 103, 104
 "King's Battery," The 161
 Kingsbridge, 34, 47, 128, 146, 158, 159, 160, 162, 163, 165, 169
 King's Bridge, (*See* Bridges)
 King's Bridge Road 55, 108, 161
 King's College 15, 121, 156, 170
 "Kissing Bridge" 100
 Knowlton, Lieut.-Col. 114
 Knyphausen, General von, 148, 160, 177
 Kuyter, Jochem Pietersen . . . 9, 11

Laaphawachking 178
 Lafayette Avenue 89, 100
 Lafayette Boulevard 57
 Lafayette Lane 100
 Lafayette, Marquis de, 17, 100, 152, 171
 Lancaster, Walter 135
 Landing Road 90, 91
 Lasher, Colonel 160
 Laurel Hill 161
 Lawrence House 65
 Lebanon Hospital 77
 Lee, Maj.-Gen. Charles, 128, 129, 130
 Leggett Dock 110
 Leggett, Gabriel (First), 89, 90, 92, 110, 141
 Leggett, Gabriel (Second) . . 90, 106
 Leggett, Helmingino 110
 Leggett's Lane 88
 Leggett, Thomas 106, 107, 110
 Legislature, Colonial 55
 Legislature, State, 14, 32, 48, 49, 56, 165, 171
 Leisler, Governor Jacob . . . 168, 175
 Leisler's Rebellion 167
 Lewis, Rev. Isaac 142
 "Lexington of Westchester," The 127
 Libraries 80
 Lincoln, Gen. Benjamin . . . 146, 162
 Lincoln Hospital 77
 "Little Mothers" Society 178
 "Little Neck" 91
 Livingston, Philip 132
 Livingstone, Janet (Mrs. Rich-
 ard Montgomery) 163
 Livingstone, Judge Robert R. . . 163
 "Locusts," The 112
 Long Island, 43, 74, 90, 99, 100, 121, 128, 135
 Long Island, Battle of 113

- Long Island Sound, 8, 37, 43, 45, 78, 84, 86, 90, 99, 114, 126, 173, 177
 Long Neck 91
 Longwood Club House 87
 Lorillard Mansion 67, 79
 Louis Philippe d'Orleans 17
 Lydig Estate 2
 Lynch, Dominick 120
 Lyon, James 186

Macedonia, English Frigate 135
 Macedonian Hotel 135
 Macomb, Alexander 49, 53
 Macomb Mansion 53
 Macomb, Robert 49, 50
 Macomb's Dam Bridge 51, 52, 54
 Macomb's Dam Park 43, 57, 69, 80
 Mamaroneck 34, 143, 180
 Maminepoe 173
 Manhattan, Borough of ... 57, 84, 134
 Manhattan Indians 1
 Manhattan Island, 4, 7, 8, 20, 30, 35, 45, 47, 55, 60, 113, 123, 126, 133, 145, 160, 187
 Manufacturing 32, 41, 42
 Marble Hill 159, 160
 Mark Twain House 65
 Marsh, Luther R. 56
 Marshall, Justice 149
 Marshall's Corners 134
 Martin, Francis 33
 Mather, Warren 180
 Mathewson, Douglas 33
 McCormick, Daniel A. 184, 187
 McGraw, Nicholas 21
 McLean, George W. 56
 Meachem, Robert 90
 Melrose 21, 145, 183, 185
Mercury, The 87
 Mill Brook 14, 15, 18
 Miller, Hon. Cyrus C. ... 24, 43, 44, 70
 Minnewit's Island 133
 Minuit, Gov. Peter 133
 "Mishow Rock" 178
 Mohawk Indians 123
 Mohegan Indians 1
 Monroe, President James 92
 Montgomery House 166
 Montgomery, Gen. Richard, 160, 163, 164, 165
 Montgomery, Sarah (Lady Ranelagh) 165
 Montessor's Island, (*See* Randall's Island)
 Morgan, Governor E. D. 126
 Morgan, Joseph 180, 181
 Morgan, Joseph, House 135
 Morris, Anna 68
 Morris Dock 51
 Morris Family 19, 68, 72
 Morris, Gouverneur (First), 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 68
 Morris, Gouverneur (Second), 17, 68
 Morris, Gouverneur, Mansion, 17, 19, 109
 Morris, Mrs. Gouverneur (Anne Cary Randolph) 17, 18
 Morris, Colonel Lewis (First), 12, 13
 Morris, Judge Lewis (Second, called Senior) 12, 13, 14, 73
 Morris, Lewis (Third, called Junior) 14, 15
 Morris, Gen. Lewis (Fourth, the Signer) 14, 15, 121
 Morris, Lewis G. 50, 51
 Morris, Mary 12
 Morris Park 32
 Morris, Capt. Richard 12
 Morris, Hon. Richard 14
 Morris, Col. Roger 155, 156
 Morris, Roger, House 114, 156
 Morris, Gen. Staats Long 14, 15
 Morris, William H., Mansion ... 18
 Morrisania, 14, 15, 18, 19, 20, 21, 49, 82, 108, 141, 145, 162, 183, 185
 Morrisania, Old 9, 13, 15, 21, 128
 Morrisania Manor 13, 14
 Morrisania Mansion 65
 Mosholu 34, 61
 Mosholu Parkway 57, 65
 Mott Haven 20, 21, 98 (note)
 Mott Haven Canal 21
 Mott, Jordan L. 20, 21
 Mount Eden 141
 Mount Hope, 141
 Mount Vernon 32
 Mullay, John 56
 Municipal Art Commission 5
 Muschenheim, William C., 5, 158, 166

Nappeckamok 5
 National Cash Register Company 42
 "Neutral Ground," The 106
 New Amsterdam, 8, 12, 13, 119, 123, 157, 167, 174
 New Jersey 12, 13, 15, 178
 New Netherland 174
 New Rochelle, 2, 20, 33, 42, 57, 98, 143, 146, 175, 178
 New York Catholic Protectory .. 79
 New York City, 20, 23, 24, 27, 30, 32, 35, 47, 49, 52, 55, 56, 57, 62, 73, 86, 96, 99, 119, 134, 159, 163, 167, 169, 170, 180
 New York Edison Company ... 41
 New York Province, 12, 13, 15, 175, 179
 New York Public Library 80
 New York State, 28, 33, 108, 158, 169, 170

- New York Telephone Company.. 42
 New York University, 71, 73, 74, 161,
 162
 Nicolls, Gov. Richard, 89, 122, 136,
 174, 175
 Niles, William W. 56
 Nimham, Chief 65
Nipinchen 4
Nonpareil, The 50, 51
 North Brother Island 78, 86
North Carolina, Frigate 133
 North, Lord 67

 O'Brien, J. F. 33
 Odell's Barns 135
 Ogden Mansion 178
 Old Point Comfort 139
 Old Timers' Association .183, 186, 187
 Old Trinity Church 2
Onrust, The 8
Oostdorp 173, 174
 Orchard Beach 57
 Orthodox Quaker Meeting House, 182

 Palmer, Benjamin 47
Paparinemo 6, 46
 Park Department 57, 69
 Parks 32, 40, 56, 70
 Parkways 33, 43, 59, 66, 68
 Parsball, James L. 82
 Parsons, General 146
 "Parsonage Land" 182
 Pasture Hill Burying Ground .. 181
 Paulding, Captain 149
 Paul Homestead 131
 Peabody Home 80, 108
 Peekskill 6
 Pelham Bay Park, 3, 33, 35, 57, 59,
 128, 178
 Pelham Bay Park, 3, 33, 35, 56, 57,
 59, 128, 176, 178
 Pelham Bridge 59, 130
 Pelham Manor, 34, 57, 128, 133, 145,
 173, 175, 176, 177, 180
 Pelham Neck ... 122, 123, 175, 177
 Pelham Parkway 33, 43, 57
 Pelham Road 130, 131
 Pelham, Township of, 175, 176, 177
 Pell, Benjamin 176
 Pell Family 182
 Pell Family Burial-ground ... 175
 Pell, Isec 176
 Pell, James K. 176
 Pell, John 174, 176
 Pell, John, D.D. 175, 176
 Pell, Joshua 176
 Pell Manor-House 175, 176
 Pell's Point 128, 148
 Pell's Point, Battle of 129, 162

 Pell, Thomas, 57, 133, 135, 173, 174,
 175, 176
 Pell Treaty Oak 173
 Penfield Homestead 148
 Perry, Commodore 147
 Philipse, Eva (Mrs. Jacobus
 Van Cortlandt) 168
 Philipse, Frederick, 45, 46, 47, 156,
 157, 168
 Philipse, Frederick (Third), 156, 157
 Philipse Manor-House 155, 156
 Philipse, Mary (Mrs. Roger Mor-
 ris) 155, 156
 Philipseburgh, Manor of, 155, 156,
 168, 169
 Pinckney, Philip 135
 "Planting Neck" 91, 94, 106
 Poe Cottage 69, 150, 153
 Poe, General David 152
 Poe, Edgar Allan, 69, 150, 151, 152,
 153, 154, 155
 Poe Park 57, 69
 Polak, Edward 33
 Pole, Sarah 12
 Population 23, 24, 29, 30
 Port Morris ... 21, 33, 45, 54, 85, 86
 Pot Rock 86
 Pouder, George W. 184, 187
 Presbyterians 76, 143
 Prescott, Col. William 127
 Provincial Assembly, 46, 59, 168, 176
 Provincial Congress, 15, 158, 159, 163,
 169
 Public School Number Four 74
 "Pudding Rock" 2
 Pugsley's Creek 121
 Pulitzer, Joseph 81
 Putnam, Col. Rufus 160

 Quakers 13, 14, 182
 Quaker Ridge 33
 Quebec 14, 163, 164, 165, 171
 Queen Anne 137, 181
Quinnahung 91, 123

 Railroads 24, 30
 Baltimore and Ohio 54
 Elevated 35, 37
 New York Central, 34, 40, 42, 160
 New York, New Haven and Hart-
 ford, 9, 15, 17, 33, 42, 54, 83,
 134
 New York, Westchester and
 Boston, 33, 34, 37, 140
 Pennsylvania 54
 Ranachqua 9, 10
 Randall, Sidwell S. 183, 184
 Randall's Island 19, 20, 54, 109
 Randolph, John 17
 Raspberry, Capt. William J. 145

Rat Island	135	Smith, John	133
Rattlesnake Brook	140	Smith, Mathew	142
Read, Colonel	128, 129	Smith, Peter	142
Real Estate, 21, 25, 26, 27, 29, 36, 39		Smith, Col. W. S.	137, 138
Reid Homestead	140	<i>Snakapins</i>	119
Reid, John	140	Snake Hill	109
Reid's Mill	140	Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, 72, 73, 180, 181	
Rensselaerswyck	10, 60	Society of St. Vincent de Paul ..	80
Renwicks, The	50, 51	Soldiers' Monument, West Farms, 141	
Rhineland, T. J. O.	63	Somler House	65
Rhineland Sugar-House Prison, 115	63	"Split Rock"	3, 123
Richardson, Elizabeth (Mrs. Gabriel Leggett)	89, 92, 110	"Split Rock" Road	3, 58, 176
Richardson, John, 89, 90, 91, 110, 141		Spuyten Duyvil, 4, 6, 7, 34, 78, 157, 158, 160	
Riverdale	34, 168	Spuyten Duyvil Creek, 4, 5, 6, 7, 43, 46, 48, 50, 57, 61, 156, 160	
Riverside Hospital	78	Spuyten Duyvil Hill	160
Robinson, Colonel	155	Spuyten Duyvil Parkway	5, 57
Rochambeau, Count de	62, 109	Spuyten Duyvil Road	160
"Rocking Stone"	2, 66	"Spy House"	143
Rodman, Samuel	178	"Spy Oak"	131
Rodman's Neck	133, 134, 175, 178	Staats, Elizabeth (Mrs. Lewis Morris)	14
Roman Catholic Orphan Assylum	161	Stanton, Joseph	140
Romayne, Dr. Nicholas	96	Stewart, A. T.	82
Rose Hill Manor-House	109	Stockbridge Indians	65, 148
Rowe, Captain	63	Stoll, Jacob Jans	10, 119
Rye	180	<i>Story of the Bronx, The</i> ...	135, 153
<i>Sackhoes</i>	6	Stuyvesant, Gov. Peter ...	173, 174
<i>Sackwrahung</i>	89	St. Ann's Avenue	17, 18
Sacred Heart Academy	120	St. Ann's Episcopal Church ...	18, 69
Scarsdale	33	St. Boniface Inn	182
Scarsdale Manor	146	St. James Park	57, 68
Schools	32, 73	St. John the Divine Cathedral ..	99
Schulz, G. M.	33	St. Joseph's Hospital	77, 78
Schwab, Julius H.	162	St. Luke's Hospital	99
Schwab Mansion	162	St. Mary's Park	57, 69
Schuyler, General	163	St. Paul's Church, Eastchester	136, 137, 139, 181
Schuyler, Gertrude (Mrs. Stephanus Van Cortlandt)	168	St. Paul's Church, Manhattan ..	165
Scott, General	146	St. Peter's Church, Westchester, 121, 179, 181, 182	
Screven, John	120	St. Raymond's Cemetery	82
Screven's Point	120	Subways	29, 31, 34, 36, 41
Seabury Creek	182	<i>Sunnyside</i>	143
Seabury, Nathaniel	73	Swartout, Col. Abraham	160
Seabury, Rev. Samuel	73, 121	Synagogs	18, 76
Seton Hospital	78		
Shahash	13	Tackamuck	9
Sheard, Moses G.	145	Taekmuck Indians	1
Sheldon, Mrs.	154	Talman, Pierre C.	145
Shepard, Colonel	128, 129	<i>Tammerlane and Other Poems</i> ..	153
Shippen, Margaret (Mrs. Benedict Arnold)	171	Tankiteke Indians	1
<i>Shorackkappock</i>	6	Taxpayers' Alliance ...	24, 25, 26, 27
Shute, Thomas	140	"Ten Farms," The	135
Sigel, Gen. Franz	69	Tennant, William	143
Simcoe, Lieut.-Col. John G. ...	65	Tetard Farm	161
Sint Sinc Indians	1	Tetard's Hill	159, 160
Siwanoy Indians, 1, 57, 121, 135, 173		Theaters	36

- "The Bronx"95, 96
 "The Raven"150, 155
 Throckmorton, John119, 123, 124
 Throgg's Neck, 40, 120, 123, 126, 127,
 128, 131, 132
 Tippet's Brook58, 61,
 Tippet's Hill159, 160
 Tiffany, Charles L.56
 Tiger, The8
 Tompkins, Nathaniel135
 "Treaty Oak"58
 Tremont36, 141, 145
 Tryon, Governor169
 "Twelve Farms," The92
 Twin Islands175, 178

 Underhill, Capt. John122
 Union Hospital78
 Unionport120
 Union Railroad Company22
 Ursuline Convent77
 United Provinces3
 United States, 1, 29, 73, 75, 90, 145,
 165
United States, U. S. Frigate135
 University Park57, 69
 Upper Cortlandt146

 Valentine House145, 146
 Valentine's Hill129
 Van Alst, Pieter10
 Van Corlaer, Anthony7
 Van Corlear, Arendt10, 60
 Van Cortlandt, Augustus61, 169
 Van Cortlandt Family, ..61, 167, 169
 Van Cortlandt, Frederick62
 Van Cortlandt, Jacobus .64, 168, 169
 Van Cortlandt, James159
 Van Cortlandt Lake60
 Van Cortlandt Mansion, ..61, 63, 64
 Van Cortlandt, Oloff Stevenson, 167
 Van Cortlandt Park, 33, 34, 40, 57, 59,
 60, 61, 65, 146, 167, 169
 Van Cortlandt, Philip ..169, 170, 171
 Van Cortlandt, Pierre ..169, 170, 171
 Van Cortlandt, Pierre, Jr. ..171, 172
 Van Cortlandt, Stephanus, 167, 168,
 169
 Van der Donck, Adrien ..7, 60, 157
 Varian, Isaac, Homestead145
 Vault Hill61
 Vermilyee, Thomas47
 Verveleen, Johannes45
 Vincent, Elijah136
 Vincent, Gilbert136
 Vincent-Halsey Mansion136, 138
 Volunteer Fire Department185
 Vriedelandt123, 173, 174

 Wakefield35, 148
 Walworth, Chancellor51
 War of 1812145
 Ward, Andrew135
 Ward Bread Company41
 Ward's Island54
 Ward, Samuel135
 Woodstock21, 141
 Warren, Elizabeth103, 104, 105
 Warren Sage House160
 Warren, Simon103
 Washington, George, 3, 15, 16, 17, 46,
 47, 58, 61, 62, 65, 93, 100, 108, 109,
 112, 113, 114, 115, 126, 127, 128,
 129, 130, 137, 139, 146, 147, 148, 152,
 155, 156, 157
 Washington Bridge53, 54
 Washington Bridge Park57, 69
 Washington's Gun House148
 Washington Hall186
 Washingtonville148
 Watson Estate2, 39, 119
 Webb, William Henry75
 Webb's Academy and Home75
 Weberg, Theodore184, 186
 Weckquaesgeek Indians, 1, 10, 106,
 123
 Wells, Hon. James L. Wells, 25, 71,
 102
 Westchester, 35, 72, 73, 99, 104, 119,
 121, 122, 144, 156, 173, 174, 179,
 180, 182, 183
 Westchester Avenue, 35, 37, 38, 39,
 43, 77, 119, 142, 179
 Westchester County, 10, 14, 15, 45,
 49, 55, 59, 106, 107, 110, 123, 128,
 141, 142, 157, 158, 159, 175, 176,
 177, 180
 Westchester Creek43, 121, 127
 Westchester Golf Club3, 119
 Westchester Guides109
 Westchester Path54
 Westchester Turnpike143
 West Farms, 34, 35, 78, 92, 93, 108,
 109, 141, 143, 144, 145, 173, 183,
 185
 West Farms Cemetery144
 West Farms Patent89
 West Farms Presbyterian Church 143
 West India Company7, 167
 West Morrisania21
 White Plains, 3, 15, 33, 55, 58, 127,
 128, 129, 147, 148, 157, 169, 177
 White Plains, Battle of59, 157
 Whiting Mansion78
 Whitlock, Benjamin M.83
 "Whitlock's Folly"84
 Whitman, Mrs. Sarah Helen, 151, 153
 Wild Boar Hill63

Wilkins Creek	121	Woodbridge, Major	108
Wilkins's Farmhouse	121	Woodlawn	35
Wilkins, Rev. Isaac	121, 182	Woodlawn Cemetery	20, 40, 81
Wilkins, Gouverneur Morris ...	121	Woodlawn Heights	40
Willett, Elizabeth	102	Woodlawn Road	35, 145, 147
Willett's Point	126	<i>Woodside</i>	111
Willett, Thomas	120	Wooster, General	146
William III.	13, 168	Wykagyl	34
William IV.	62		
Williams, John	147	Yates, Robert	159
Williams, Roger	119, 122	Yonkers, 5, 7, 35, 40, 60, 155, 156, 157, 169, 180	
Williamsbridge, 35, 141, 145, 146, 147, 159			
Willis, N. P.	154	Zborowsky Farm	68
Winthrop, Gov. John	174	Zborowsky Mansion	68
"Wishing Rock"	148	Zborowsky, Martin	68
"Wishing Seat"	157	Zerega Mansion	122
Wolfe, Catherine Lorillard	79	Zerega's Point	122
Wolf's Lane	176	Zoological Gardens	65, 66, 77

